







lang="en">



# Underdog Versus Boss - Chapter 001-133

## Table of Contents

- 1. [Introduction](#)
- 2. [1](#)
- 3. [2](#)
- 4. [3](#)
- 5. [4](#)
- 6. [5](#)
- 7. [6 – 7](#)
- 8. [8](#)
- 9. [9 – 10](#)
- 10. [11 – 12](#)
- 11. [13](#)
- 12. [14](#)
- 13. [15](#)
- 14. [16 – 17](#)
- 15. [18 – 19](#)
- 16. [20 – 21](#)
- 17. [22 – 23](#)
- 18. [24 – 25](#)
- 19. [26 – 27](#)
- 20. [28](#)
- 21. [29 – 30](#)
- 22. [31 – 32](#)
- 23. [33](#)
- 24. [34 – 35](#)
- 25. [36](#)
- 26. [37 – 38](#)
- 27. [39 – 40](#)

28. [41 – 42](#)
29. [43 – 44](#)
30. [45 – 46](#)
31. [47 – 48](#)
32. [49 – 50](#)
33. [51 – 52](#)
34. [53 – 54](#)
35. [55 – 56](#)
36. [57 – 58](#)
37. [59 – 60](#)
38. [61 – 62](#)
39. [63 – 64](#)
40. [65 – 66](#)
41. [67 – 68](#)
42. [69](#)
43. [70](#)
44. [71](#)
45. [72](#)
46. [73 – 74](#)
47. [75 – 76](#)
48. [77 – 78](#)
49. [79 – 80](#)
50. [81](#)
51. [82](#)
52. [83](#)
53. [84](#)
54. [85](#)
55. [86 – 87](#)
56. [88](#)
57. [89](#)
58. [90](#)
59. [91](#)
60. [92](#)
61. [93](#)

62. [94](#)
63. [95](#)
64. [96](#)
65. [97](#)
66. [98](#)
67. [99](#)
68. [100](#)
69. [101](#)
70. [102](#)
71. [103](#)
72. [104](#)
73. [105](#)
74. [106](#)
75. [107](#)
76. [108](#)
77. [109](#)
78. [110](#)
79. [111](#)
80. [112](#)
81. [113](#)
82. [114](#)
83. [115](#)
84. [116](#)
85. [117](#)
86. [118](#)
87. [119](#)
88. [120](#)
89. [121](#)
90. [122](#)
91. [123](#)
92. [124](#)
93. [125](#)
94. [126 part 1](#)
95. [part 2](#)

- 96. [127](#)
- 97. [128](#)
- 98. [129](#)
- 99. [130](#)
- 00. [131](#)
- 01. [132](#)
- 02. [133](#)

# Introduction

## UVB – Introduction

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



**Underdog Versus Boss (天价剩女：挑战魔性总裁) by Xi Meng (夕梦)**



### Introduction

Genres: Modern romance, slice of life, drama, revenge

326 Chapters, HE.

Female Lead: Da Tian Ting (DTT)

Male Lead: Feng Kai Ze (FKZ)

### Synopsis:

FKZ and DTT are childhood rivals.

FKZ is the love child of a ruthless tycoon. He resents his father for his mother's death. When his father forces him to leave his mother's hometown, he steals DTT's diary.

DTT resents her mother for abandoning her and her father to marry her mother's first love.

Unbeknownst to DTT, her father's friend betrays him by stealing her father's

invention. She believes her inheritance is from her father's life savings.

DTT loves her father. She agrees to marry her father's friend's son.

On the eve of DTT's wedding day, her fiancé cheats on her. She cancels the wedding and breaks off the engagement.

When DTT hits rock bottom she reunites with FKZ. She doesn't recognise the adult FKZ. She thinks he is a handsome pauper and plans to recruit him as her wedding date to her ex-fiancé's wedding.

FKZ recognises his childhood rival DTT. Initially FKZ wants to use DTT to defy his father's order for him to marry the daughter of a businessman who is blackmailing his father.

FKZ and DTT join forces to take revenge on the people who hurt their mother and father respectively. Blind by revenge, FKZ and DTT can't see cupid's arrow targeting their hearts.

#### Notice:

All Underdog Versus Boss' characters, events & stunts are fictional.

Read FAQs and Copyright & Disclaimer on the side bar. It will answer most readers' questions.

Please do not copy text from the blog.

Please do not link to Underdog Versus Boss before status is shown as complete on the blog's index.

For viet readers, search Xi Meng's viet name, Tịch Mộng to read Xi Meng's c-novels translated to viet.

Readers who have read Underdog Versus Boss in another language, please do not post spoiler comments because it ruins the element of surprise for new readers.

DGSTE, RRF and RB I readers, check blog after xmas for new chapter updates.

#### **Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)

- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 14, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter One

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter One



Feng Kai Ze opened Da Tian Ting’s diary for the thousandth time. He always read her diary when he had a bad day. Her sincerity always cheered him up.

5<sup>th</sup> March XXXX

Today I fought with little monkey. Both of us have bruises. It’s my fault for insulting little monkey has no dad. Tomorrow I’m going to put an apple in little monkey’s bag to say sorry.

7<sup>th</sup> April XXXX

Today is the last day of my exams. Mummy made a lunch box for me to eat at school.

I know little monkey only has rice and pickled radish to eat for lunch. I purposely lost a bet with him so he’ll agree to eat my lunch box with me.

Feng Kai Ze closed Da Tian Ting’s diary. Sixteen years ago, he thought Da Tian Ting was his childhood rival. So on the day he left his mother’s hometown, he stole Da Tian Ting’s most prized possession, her diary. He memorised every page of her diary, and every day he wondered what her life was like in his mother’s hometown.

Across an ocean from Feng Kai Ze’s home, Da Tian Ting rode a bike slowly



through the busy roads. It was Shang Duan Hua's birthday. Da Tian Ting took half a day of work leave, because she wanted to go home early and cook a surprise birthday dinner for Shang Duan Hua.

Da Tian Ting felt sad every time she returned to the Shang family home. Ten years ago, her father died and entrusted the Shang family to be her guardian. Her father chose Shang Duan Hua to be her fiancé.

In the last ten years Da Tian Ting honored her father's wish. She worked, took care of the Shang family home, and supported Shang Duan Hua.

Da Tian Ting and Shang Duan Hua's wedding day was in a few days.

Da Tian Ting parked the bike in front of an apartment building. She took off her helmet, and didn't care about her helmet hair.

By the time Da Tian Ting ran upstairs to the Shang family home, it was three o'clock in the afternoon. Since everyone was working, she used her key to open the apartment instead of ringing the doorbell.

Da Tian Ting opened the door. There were clothes scattered along the hallway. She thought a thief broke into the apartment. On closer inspection, nothing was missing from the living room so she ruled out the thief scenario.

Da Tian Ting followed the trail of a man and a woman's clothing and underwear from the living room to a bedroom. She heard moans from the bedroom. The bedroom door was wide opened. She could see clearly into the bedroom. Her fiancé and her cousin were naked together on the bed. It was a ten year nightmare in the making. Her heart raced, two people closest to her had betrayed her trust.

Shang Duan Hua felt someone standing at the door. He turned around, it was his fiancé. He withdrew from Da Ming Sheng's body, got out of bed and put clothes on.

Da Ming Sheng pulled the bedsheet over her naked body.

'Who's there?' Da Ming Sheng asked. 'Big sister, is it you? Why are you home early?'

'If I didn't come home early then I would have missed out on the most

spectacular sight in my life,’ Da Tian Ting said sarcastically.

Da Tian Ting didn’t want to cry in front of the people who betrayed her. She wasted half a day of work leave, and missed out on the monthly bonus for work attendance. What surprise birthday dinner? It wasn’t her birthday yet she received one of the biggest surprises in her life.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter One

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Two

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Two



Da Ming Sheng wanted Shang Duan Hua to confess their affair to Da Tian Ting. For ten years Shang Duan Hua was engaged to her older cousin, Da Tian Ting. Shang Duan Hua and Da Tian Ting's relationship was colder than ice water. Shang Duan Hua holding Da Tian Ting's hand was rarer than finding gold. It was Da Tian Ting's fault for being a frigid. Da Ming Sheng only needed to flutter her eyelashes at Shang Duan Hua and she had him under her fingertips.

Shang Duan Hua's family wasn't one of the richest families in the city. But Da Ming Sheng didn't need to work if she married Shang Duan Hua.

'Tian Ting, it's good you found out,' Shang Duan Hua. 'I admit I don't find you attractive, and I have no feelings toward you. If our parents didn't insist on our engagement, I would never have considered marrying you.'

Shang Duan Hua was happy he finally got everything off his chest.

Shang Duan Hua hated a frigid like Da Tian Ting. They were engaged for ten years, but she didn't let him kiss her lips. On rare occasions, she let him hold her hand.

'Why did you wait so long to tell me you hate me?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting restrained herself from beating up the cheating couple in front of her. She lived blindly in a lit oven for ten years.

'If I didn't agree to marry you, my father wouldn't let me inherit his company,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'I would become a pauper if I don't marry you. I know I'm being selfish. But I tried to make things work with you. You're the type of woman I hate most. You're a frugal frigid who doesn't care about your appearance. You're twenty-eight, but you don't act like other young brides. You act like an old hag. It's my dad who is pressuring me to marry you.'

Shang Duan Hua felt like he was the victim.

'If you had told me sooner that you hate me, I would have let you go,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Just to inherit your dad's company, you wasted ten years of my youth. Shang Duan Hua, you're a f'ing bastard.'

Da Tian Ting slapped Shang Duan Hua's face.

Shang Duan Hua was angry he couldn't return the slap, because Da Tian Ting had caught him in bed with Da Ming Sheng.

Da Ming Sheng stood by Shang Duan Hua's side, and she glared at Da Tian Ting.

'Big sister, you can't blame everything on Duan Hua,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'Duan Hua suffered more than you in the last ten years. He had to act like a dutiful fiancé to you for ten years.'

'Don't make me laugh,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Don't act like the victims when you and the f'king bastard have been having an affair behind my back for ten years.'

'I don't care who is right or wrong,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'If you can accept Ming Sheng in my life then I'll marry you as planned. If you can't accept Ming Sheng then you should call off the wedding and our engagement.'

Shang Duan Hua had enough of living in hell with the frigid Da Tian Ting.

‘I see,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘If I call off the wedding and the engagement then you can still inherit your dad’s company.’

‘You’re right,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

Da Ming Sheng linked arms with Shang Dua Hua.

‘Big sister, it’s best if you call off the wedding and engagement,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Dua Hua hates you. Why put yourself through a miserable marriage? Even if you marry Dua Hua, he’ll be sleeping in my bed. After you end things with Dua Hua, he and I can marry each other.’

‘It’s over,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Shang Duan Hua, you’re no longer my fiancée.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Two

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Three

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Three



Shang Duan Hua didn't chase after Da Tian Ting. He was happy Da Tian Ting ended their engagement. It meant he would inherit his dad's company, and marry Da Ming Sheng.

Da Ming Sheng was happy too. But she maintained her innocent act.

'Duan Hua, shouldn't you chase after big sister?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

'What's the point?' Shang Duan Hua asked. 'It's better this way. I wish I had asked her to end the engagement sooner.'

Shang Duan Hua cast Da Tian Ting out of his mind. He kissed Da Ming Sheng's lips to celebrate his freedom.

'What do we do if something happens to big sister?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

Shang Duan Hua walked to the door.

'Do you want me to chase after her?' Shang Duan Hua joked.

Da Ming Sheng held onto Shang Duan Hua's arm.

'No,' Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng secretly schemed to steal Shang Duan Hua from Da Tian Ting since she was a little girl. She was happy Da Tian Ting gave her an opportunity to marry Shang Duan Hua.

A small part of Shang Duan Hua's heart felt guilty toward Da Tian Ting. He hated her, but they grew up together. He chose not to chase after her, because he wanted to start a new life.

Outside the apartment building, Da Tian Ting ran and occasionally looked back to see if Shang Duan Hua chased after her. There were no signs of his shadow. She slowed down her steps, and felt like a soulless shell wandering the streets.

The happy couples around Da Tian Ting made her feel like they were mocking her torn heart.

Da Tian Ting felt numb like a lost child who didn't know where their home was.

Da Tian Ting walked into a random bar. People say alcohol helped to forget sorrows. She wanted to know if alcohol could help her forget ten years of lies.

The bar wasn't crowded in the middle of the afternoon. There were two men sitting at a window table. They looked like they were having a catch up.

Da Tian Ting chose to sit at an empty table, and a waiter served her.

'Miss, do you want to order something to eat or drink?' the waiter asked.

'Give me the strongest wine,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I'm here to drink away my sorrows.'

'Miss, it's not safe for you to be drunk on your own,' the waiter said. 'Why don't you call your friends to keep you company?'

'Does this bar have a policy that doesn't serve drinks to customers who come on their own?' Da Tian Ting asked.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Three

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)



## UVB – Chapter Four

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Four



The waiter served Da Tian Ting the strongest wine.

Da Tian Ting had poor alcohol tolerance, and was a loud drunk. After one glass of wine, her head swayed side to side.

‘Shang Duan Hua, you liar!’ Da Tian Ting mumbled. ‘How can you lie to me for so long?’

The two men sitting by the window were annoyed their catch up was disturbed by a loud drunk.

‘Kai Ze, should we go somewhere else?’ Yang Fei asked.

‘Today I’m in a good mood,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Let’s ignore the drunk broken hearted woman.’

‘OK,’ Yang Fei said. ‘Since you just landed today, we’ll stay. Do you want me to...’

It was hard for Yang Fei to ignore the loud drunk woman sitting on the table to his right.

‘Shang Duan Hua, you’re the biggest liar in the world!’ Da Tian Ting mumbled. ‘I hate you! What did I do wrong for everyone to lie to me?’

Da Tian Ting shook the bottle of wine in her hand. She didn’t care if she looked and sounded like a crazy woman in public. She only wanted to vent out the pain in her heart.

People who say alcohol helped to forget sorrows were wrong. Da Tian Ting couldn’t get the image of Shang Duan Hua and Yang Fei in bed together.

‘Shang Duan Hua, I hate you!’ Da Tian Ting mumbled. ‘How can you lie to me for ten years?’

The waiter wanted to kick Da Tian Ting outside the bar. But Da Tian Ting didn’t destroy any property or assault anyone. So the waiter could only standby and watch.

‘Kai Ze, what about boss Feng...’ Yang Fei asked.

‘Yang Fei, if you disclose my whereabouts then our friendship is over,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You and I will only have a master and servant relationship.’

Feng Kai Ze was raised under his father’s rule since Feng Kai Ze turned ten. For sixteen years, Yang Fei and Feng Kai Ze’s relationship was a cross breed between friendship and work. But Yang Fei understood what lines not to cross.

Feng Kai Ze’s father gave Yang Fei an education because Feng Kai Ze wanted Yang Fei to spy on Feng Kai Ze. Under the sugar coating, Yang Fei knew he was the Feng Household’s servant.

‘Yang Fei, go home,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You’re a smart man. You know what to do.’

‘I understand,’ Yang Fei said.

Yang Fei stood, and left the rowdy bar.

Da Tian Ting stood, her hand swayed the bottle of wine side to side and cursed Shang Duan Hua.

‘Shang Duan Hua, I hope a liar like you will never live a happy life!’ Da Tian Ting mumbled.

Da Tian Ting drank the bottle of wine. She staggered, and fell on the floor at Feng Kai Ze's feet.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Four

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Five

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Five



Feng Kai Ze was a clean freak. He could overlook a loud drunk. But he couldn't overlook the loud drunk at his feet, and the wine stain on his pants.

Da Tian Ting opened her eyes. She saw a man's pants. In her drunk state she thought the pants belonged to Shang Duan Hua. She gripped the man's pants, pulled herself up and grabbed the man's shirt.

'Shang Duan Hua, do you think it's amusing to lie to me for ten years?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze hated strangers touching him too. He didn't hesitate to pull the drunk woman's hands off his shirt.

Da Tian Ting stumbled back. She didn't want to let the man she thought was Shang Duan Hua off the hook. She grabbed the man's shirt again.

'Why was I so gullible?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'Why did I believe you? Why did I do everything for you? Why did you lie to me? You're not a man!'

Feng Kai Ze knew it was pointless talking to a drunk.

'Waiter,' Feng Kai Ze called.

‘Yes sir,’ the waiter said.

‘This woman is your customer,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You know what to do with rowdy customers.’

‘Yes sir,’ the waiter said.

The waiter held Da Tian Ting’s arm. She elbowed the waiter, and grabbed onto Feng Kai Ze’s shirt again.

‘Duan Hua, tell me what I saw today was an illusion,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Tell me that you love me.’

‘Let go of me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘No,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I held your hand for ten years. How can you ask me to let go of you now?’

‘Crazy woman,’ Feng Kai Ze called. ‘You’ve got the wrong person. Let go of me.’

Feng Kai Ze thought it was an unlucky day. The first day back in his mother’s hometown, he met a crazy drunk.

‘Duan Hua, I’m begging you not to leave me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Sir, if this is your girlfriend then you should help settle her bill,’ the waiter said.

‘Who said she’s my girlfriend?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

The waiter was scared of Feng Kai Ze’s fierce aura.

Da Tian Ting hugged Feng Kai Ze.

‘Duan Hua, don’t turn your back on me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting was overwhelmed by nausea. She opened her mouth, and vomited wine on Feng Kai Ze’s clothes.

Feng Kai Ze instinctively pushed Da Tian Ting off him. She fell on the floor and accidentally hit her head on a table.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Five

# Share this:

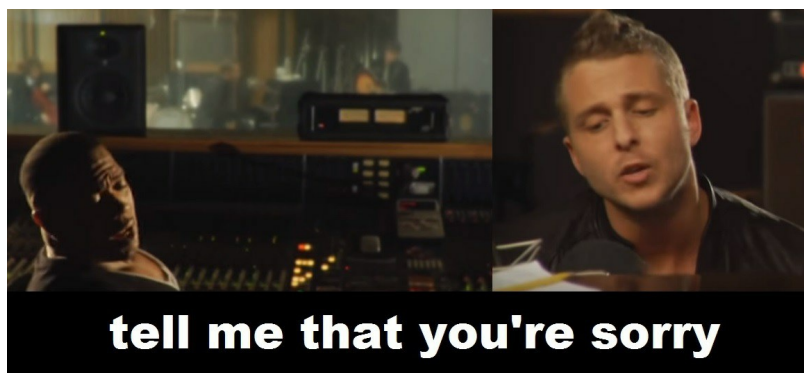
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Six to Seven

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Six to Seven



#### Chapter Six

The waiter didn't see Da Tian Ting move on the floor.

'Is she dead?' the waiter asked.

The waiter's words alarmed the customers in the bar. They looked accusingly at Feng Kai Ze.

'Sir, it's wrong to hit your girlfriend,' a man said.

'That's right,' a woman said. 'A man who hits a woman has no right to call himself a man.'

'Hurry up and take your girlfriend to the hospital,' the man said.

Feng Kai Ze's unlucky streak came in three. First a crazy woman cursed him, she vomited on him and strangers accused him of hitting the crazy woman.

The bar owner rushed to Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting.

'Sir, pay your girlfriend's bill and take your girlfriend to the hospital,' the owner said. 'If you don't, I'll call the cops.'

‘She’s not my girlfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Sir, even if you broke up with your girlfriend, she’s still your friend,’ the woman said. ‘Do the right thing, and take your friend to the hospital.’

‘Sir, here is your girlfriend’s bill,’ the owner said. ‘Pay it and take her to the hospital. If you leave without paying, I’ll call the cops.’

Feng Kai Ze took out his wallet, he paid the bar owner and took the crazy woman to the hospital.

On the way to the hospital, Feng Kai Ze vowed to make the crazy woman pay him back the expensive bottle of wine she bought.

When Da Tian Ting woke up, she felt dizzy and nauseous. She looked at her surroundings, and didn’t know why she was lying on a hospital bed. She remembered seeing Shang Duan Hua and Yang Fei in bed together then she went to a bar and drank wine. Did she curse someone at the bar? She couldn’t remember what happened after she fell on the floor.

Feng Kai Ze walked out of the bathroom in stained wet clothes.

‘Sir, who are you?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Finally you’re awake,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze had to watch over the crazy woman for half the night.

‘Sir, do we know each other?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘I don’t remember meeting you.’

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Seven**

‘Are you sure we don’t know each other?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Da Tian Ting checked out the man in front of her. She had no interest in brooding handsome men like him.

‘Sir, I’m sure we don’t know each other,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Since Da Tian Ting was eighteen, she had no interest in men who wasn’t Shang Duan Hua. Shang Duan Hua was the prince in her heart. But that day, he was no longer her prince. She had no other choice except let go of the pain in her heart.



‘Miss, now that you’re sober, you need to settle your debt,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Debt?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Do I owe you money?’

Da Tian Ting put her heartbreak aside. When it came to money, she wasn’t an easy target for scammers.

‘You owe me money and an apology,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Sir, we have never met,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘How can I owe you money? What have I done to provoke you?’

Da Tian Ting got out of bed, and stood opposite the tall handsome man. No one was going to scam money off her, not even the tall handsome man.

‘Miss, did you pay for your bottle of wine at the bar?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Did you drive yourself to the hospital? Now do you remember?’

‘Oh,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting’s dizzy head only clearly remembered Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng’s betrayal.

‘Sir, tell me what happened,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Miss, I can forget about paying your bill,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘But I can’t forget you mistaking me for Shang Duan Hua. You cursed me, and vomit on me. You owe me an apology.’

Feng Kai Ze’s heart softened a bit because the crazy woman was dumped by her boyfriend. So he would be satisfied with an apology.

Da Tian Ting heard Feng Kai Ze mentioned Shang Duan Hua’s name, and understood she must have mistaken Feng Kai Ze for Shang Duan Hua.

‘Sir, I’m really sorry,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t remember what happened at the bar. But if I offended you, I’m really sorry.’

Da Tian Ting didn’t want to apologise to the stranger who acted high and mighty. But she was raised to apologise if she did something wrong.

Feng Kai Ze acted like the bigger person, and forgave the crazy woman.

‘Since you sincerely apologised, everything is good,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze turned around, and took a step to the door.

‘Sir, wait,’ Da Tian Ting said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Six to Seven

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Eight

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Eight



Da Tian Ting held Feng Kai Ze's arm to stop him from leaving. He turned around, gave her a let him go look and she let go of his arm.

'About what happened...' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting didn't know why she was intimidated by the stranger in front of her.

'Don't touch me again,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze wasted his breath. After he left the hospital, he didn't expect to see the crazy woman again.

'Sir, I won't touch you again,' Da Tian Ting said. 'It's not like I want to touch you. I only wanted to ask you how much money I owe you. So I can pay you back.'

Da Tian Ting hated the feeling of owing anyone anything, especially a stranger.

Feng Kai Ze thought the crazy woman had something important to say. He

didn't care about the money she owed him, because she apologised. He turned around and took another step to the door.

'Hey,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting reach for the man's arm then put her arm back down.

'Sir,' Da Tian Ting called.

Feng Kai Ze kept walking like he didn't hear anyone.

Da Tian Ting ran in front of him and spread her arms out.

'Miss, what do you want?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Sir, tell me how much money I owe you at the bar and for the hospital fee,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Forget you own me money,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze pushed the crazy woman's arm out of the way, and walked to the door.

Da Tian Ting ran in front of the man again.

'Sir, I don't like owing anyone anything,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting couldn't sleep soundly knowing she owed someone money.

'Five thousand dollars,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze said a random amount so he could leave the hospital.

'Do you want to rob me?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn't believe she could drink that much alcohol.

'I'm giving you two options,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You can either choose to pay me five thousand dollars or you can choose to get out of my way.'

Da Tian Ting put up five fingers.

'Five hundred dollars,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting thought five hundred dollars was a reasonable amount compared to five thousand dollars.

'You can get out of the way,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting looked in her pockets for money, and realised she didn't have money on her.

'Sir, I'm sorry,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I left my wallet at home. Stay here and wait for me. I'll come back with money.'

'Fool,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze brisked walk out of the hospital, he got into a taxi and disappeared.

Da Tian Ting didn't run outside the hospital fast enough.

'Who are you calling a fool?' Da Tian Ting yelled at the taxi in the distance.

It was Da Tian Ting's unlucky day. She lost a fiance and met a bad man.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eight

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Nine to Ten

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Nine to Ten



### Chapter Nine

Da Tian Ting stood lost outside the hospital. She didn't know what life road to take. She looked for her phone, and remembered she left it at work so she couldn't call a friend.

Da Tian Ting didn't have anywhere to walk to except back to her uncle's home.

Da Tian Ting stood in front of her uncle's home, and hesitated to knock on the door. When she turned around, Da Ming Sheng opened the door. Da Ming Sheng acted surprised to see her.

'Dad, mum,' Da Ming Sheng called. 'Big sister is home.'

'Tian Ting, you're home,' Da Qing Feng said. He held Da Tian Ting's hand, and took her inside. 'It's good you're home. It's the first time you went out all night, and you didn't answer your phone. Uncle was worried about you.'

'Uncle, I'm OK,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting ignored Shang Duan Hua. She didn't want to see him, because she couldn't forgive his betrayal. She didn't know how she would cope without him. But the way he casually read the newspaper like nothing happened made her furious. He didn't bother to greet her let alone apologise to her. Was his heart made out of stone? How could he pretend like ten years meant nothing?

Da Tian Ting still hoped Shang Duan Hua came to her uncle's home to apologise.

'Why did you come here today?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Shang Duan Hua put the newspaper down, he stood and smiled at Da Ming Sheng.

'I'm here to see someone,' Shang Duan Hua said.

Da Tian Ting understood why Shang Duan Hua came to her uncle's home. It was another stab to her heart. She knew she should let go, because she didn't want to be a third party in anyone's relationship.

'Tian Ting, what's wrong?' Da Qing Feng asked.

Da Qing Feng thought Shang Duan Hua came to his home to look for Da Tian Ting. He was shocked Shang Duan Hua came to his home for another reason.

'Uncle, thank you for taking care of me for the last ten years,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Today I'm going to move out. Uncle, don't worry about me. I'm old enough to take care of myself. Uncle, I'll come to Ming Sheng and Duan Hua's wedding to wish them happiness.'

Da Tian Ting forced herself to smile and pretend she wasn't hurting. Then she walked to her bedroom and packed. She chose to leave, because she wanted to let go.

Shang Duan Hua didn't want to marry Da Tian Ting. Hurting her was the only way he would be free to start a new life.

\*\*\*

## Chapter Ten

'Duan Hua, tell me what's going on,' Da Qing Feng said. 'Why did your wedding with Tian Ting turned into your wedding with Ming Sheng?'

Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng were nervous to tell Da Qing Feng the truth, because Da Qing Feng loved Da Tian Ting as much as he loved Da Ming Sheng.

Ning Kan chose that moment to come out of the kitchen. She was happy to tell Da Qing Feng the good news.

‘Qing Feng, don’t know that Duan Hua and Ming Sheng love each other?’ Ning Kan asked. ‘Duan Hua and Ming Sheng have been together for a long time. But Tian Ting’s the third party so they could only be together secretly. Yesterday Tian Ting found out the truth. That’s why Tian Ting didn’t come home last night.’

‘Duan Hua, is this true?’ Da Qing Feng asked.

Da Qing Feng wanted to hear Shang Duan Hua’s confession. If it was true, he didn’t approved of Shang Duan Hua’s slyness.

‘Yes,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘The woman I love is Ming Sheng.’

Da Ming Sheng held back her dad’s arm.

‘Duan Hua, you MF!’ Da Qin Feng cursed.

Da Qing Feng wanted to pound Shang Duan Hua’s face.

Ning Kan stood in between Da Qing Feng and Shang Duan Hua.

‘Qing Feng, you’re the MF!’ Ning Kan said. ‘Ming Sheng is your daughter. Why are you taking the side of another man’s daughter? You’re not worthy to be Ming Sheng’s father.’

‘Tian Ting is my big brother’s daughter and my niece,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Is it wrong for an uncle to care about his niece’s welfare? My big brother gave his blessing for Duan Hua to marry Tian Ting before big brother died. How can the three of you stand here and gang up on my dead big brother’s daughter?’

‘What era are we living in?’ Ning Kan asked. ‘Why should a dead man get to decide who Duan Hua should marry? Duan Hua hates Tian Ting. He loves Ming Sheng. It’s you and his father who are ganging up on Duan Hua to force him to marry someone he hates.’

‘Ning Kan, how can you be such an ungrateful person?’ Da Qing Feng asked. ‘Have you forgotten that we wouldn’t be where we are today without my big



brother's support?'

'Taking care of Tian Ting for ten years is enough to repay your dead big brother,' Ning Kan said. 'Why won't you let Duan Hua and Ming Sheng be together?'

Da Tian Ting could hear everyone arguing from her bedroom. She found out that it was only her and her uncle who were the last to know. But Ning Kan said one true thing, she shouldn't get in the way of Duan Hua and Ming Sheng if they loved each other.

Da Tian Ting picked up her packed suitcase, and carried it outside her bedroom. Everyone stopped fighting, and waited for her to talk.

'Uncle, aunt, thank you for taking care of me for ten years,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I'm leaving now. Duan Hua, Ming Sheng, don't worry. I'll attend your wedding. Who knows, I may show up to your wedding with a boyfriend.'

Da Tian Ting walked outside her uncle's home. Her uncle's wife stopped him from asking her to stay.

Shang Duan Hua saw Da Tian Ting leave, and he regretted his decision.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Nine to Ten

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

# 11 – 12

## UVB – Chapters Eleven to Twelve

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Eleven to Twelve



### Chapter Eleven

Da Ming Sheng hid her happiness. Da Tian Ting was out of the picture, and Shang Duan Hua belonged to her. She was grateful Da Tian Ting caught her and Shang Duan Hua in bed. She never wanted to see Shang Duan Hua and Da Tian Ting get married. She wanted to be the legitimate Mrs Shang.

‘Duan Hua, how are you going to tell your father?’ Da Qing Feng asked. ‘Do you think your father will give his company to you?’

Da Qing Feng was stuck between his daughter and his niece. Whoever he didn’t support would be hurt.

‘Tian Ting said she would call of the engagement,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘You know how to cut a person without a knife,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘How selfish are you? You hurt Tian Ting yet you want her to take the fall. I love my daughter and my niece. If it’s my daughter you want to marry then I won’t get in the way. You don’t need me to tell you what a lowlife man you are. Don’t ever think that I want a selfish and heartless bastard like you to be my son-in-law.’

‘Da Qing Feng, watch what you’re saying,’ Ning Kan said.

Da Qing Feng didn’t want to see his wife, daughter or the sly Shang Duan Hua. He walked to his bedroom, and closed the door.

Shang Duan Hua thought Da Qing Feng was right to hate him. When Da Tian Ting was shocked and heartbroken to see him in bed with Da Qing Feng, he didn’t pity Da Tian Ting, he only selfishly thought about his freedom.

‘Duan Hua, don’t take my dad’s words to heart,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Dad loves big sister so he’s angry on her behalf.’

Da Ming Sheng didn’t care about Da Tian Ting. She only cared about Shang Duan Hua not changing his mind about marrying her.

‘Duan Hua, Ming Sheng is right,’ Ning Kan said. ‘I hate the way her dad loves Tian Ting more than he loves Ming Sheng. It’s better for Tian Ting to suffer now then suffer later. Forget about them. It’s Ming Sheng you love. You and Ming Sheng only need to think about your happy future together.’

Ning Kan knew her daughter was worried Shang Duan Hua would change his mind because of her husband’s insults.

‘Aunty, don’t worry,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘I’ve already forgotten uncle’s words.’

Shang Duan Hua thought Ning Kan was right too. It was better for Da Tian Ting to suffer before marrying him than suffering after marrying him. He did the right thing by getting Da Tian Ting to end their engagement, and let her find her own happiness.

‘Duan Hua, let’s take pre-wedding photos tomorrow,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Shang Duan Hua nodded his head. He needed to get rid of the bit of guilt he felt. He shouldn’t regret his decision. He told himself it was Da Ming Sheng he

wanted to marry, and not Da Tian Ting.

\*\*\*

## Chapter Twelve

Da Tian Ting regretted leaving in an emotional state, because she didn't have anywhere to go.

Da Tian Ting had saved up money over the years for her honeymoon. Since she wasn't getting married, she could use her honeymoon money to find an apartment to rent.

Da Tian Ting tilted her head back to let the sun dry her tears. She wasn't going to cry. She was going to move on with her life, starting with finding an apartment to rent and going to work in the morning. She was always a punctual employee, and didn't take sick leave.

Da Tian Ting walked around the streets. She felt comfortable not having Shang Duan Hua around. Looking back, he was a burden to her. She always put his needs before her needs.

Da Tian Ting compared the way she dressed and the way strangers her age dressed on the streets. Because she prioritised saving money for her future with Shang Duan Hua, she neglected herself.

Da Tian Ting looked like an old woman in her old baggy clothes. While the women her age wore trendy fitted clothes.

Da Tian Ting put her suitcase on the pavement, and looked at her reflection in a shop window. She saw a young woman dressed like an old woman. It shouldn't surprise her that her fiancé had an affair with her cousin who only cared about looking good.

'Da Tian Ting, you're a fool!' Da Tian Ting said to herself. 'You wasted your youth on a lowlife.'

'Aunty, your suitcase is in the way,' a young man said.

'Aunty, move your suitcase,' a young woman said.

Da Tian Ting looked at the young couple. They were about the same age as her, but they called her aunty. The way the young couple talked sweetly to each

other made her nauseous. She never talked sweetly to Shang Duan Hua. It was a good thing she found out Shang Duan Hua was a fraud, and never cared about her.

Da Tian Ting accepted how naive she was. Lowlife men like Shang Duan Hua didn't want sincere love. They wanted someone who talked sweetly to them, and who looked good.

'Aunty, your suitcase,' the young man said.

'Let's go somewhere else,' the young woman said. 'This old maid must be deaf.'

Old maid? Da Tian Ting was only a twenty-eight-year-old woman. She had her whole life ahead of her. She sighed. Finding an apartment to rent was more important than arguing with the ignorant young couple.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Eleven to Twelve

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Thirteen

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Thirteen



Da Tian Ting didn't need to worry about money so she easily found a good apartment to rent.

A new environment cheered up Da Tian Ting. Compared to the apartments she lived in the past, her new apartment was better.

Da Tian Ting unpacked her suitcase, and found old photos of her and Shang Duan Hua. In the past she used to look at these photos if she felt sad. Everything changed, she wasn't blind anymore. Looking closely at the photos, Shang Duan Hua's smile was stiff and he clearly hated taking photos with her.

Da Tian Ting accepted Shang Duan Hua had always hated her. It was her fault for being infatuated with him.

'Duan Hua, I'm sorry for being blind,' Da Tian Ting said to the photos. 'I should have seen your hatred and intolerance. Don't worry you won't need to suffer being with me anymore. Shang Duan Hua, from this day forward, you and I, Da Tian Ting will live in two different worlds. Everything is over between us, we're now strangers.'

Da Tian Ting didn't hesitate to rip up the photos, and put them in the bin along

with other items associated with Shang Duan Hua. Then she continued tidying up her new apartment.

Da Tian Ting looked at her belongings. She didn't own anything apart from her old clothes. She took it as a good sign to forget about the past, and to look forward to her fresh start.

Da Tian Ting grabbed her bag and helmet. She rode a bike to the neighboring markets to buy new clothes, furnishings and daily essentials.

At the markets, Da Tian Ting took time to look at goods before making purchases.

Outside the markets, Da Tian Ting's bike collided with another bike.

'I'm really sorry,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting looked at the familiar man's frosty face.

'Why is it you?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze knew it was another unlucky day the moment he collided with the crazy woman.

'So what if it's me?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

Da Tian Ting thought the man she owed money was a grudge holder.

'What are you doing here?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Miss, this is a public market,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Is there a rule if you come here, I'm not allowed to come here?'

'You're right... wait,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Did you follow me here to get back your money?'

'Have you forgotten?' Feng Kai Ze asked. 'I asked you to choose either giving me five thousand dollars or getting out of my way.'

'Sir, don't worry,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I'm something who hates owing anyone anything. I'm paying you back right now.'

Da Tian Ting had never met a generous man in her life. If she went out to eat with men, they made her split the bill. But the man in front of her was a first class grudge holder.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirteen

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)



## UVB – Chapter Fourteen

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)

# snatch



## Chapter Fourteen



Feng Kai Ze picked up his bike, and pushed it in a different direction from the crazy woman.

Da Tian Ting ran in front of Feng Kai Ze and waved two hundred and fifty dollars (i.e. 250 in Chinese is a pun. An alternate meaning to 250 is calling someone an idiot. *E.g.* 419 can also mean for one night / one night stand).

‘Today I didn’t bring a lot of money with me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I still need to buy essentials. Here is two hundred and fifty dollars. Don’t worry, I always keep my promises. Next time, I’ll give you the outstanding two hundred and fifty dollars.’

Feng Kai Ze looked at the two hundred and fifty dollars in the crazy woman’s hand. Was she calling him an idiot? He would be an idiot if he accepted her money.

Feng Kai Ze ignored the crazy woman, and pushed his bike away from her.

‘Hey!’ Da Tian Ting called. ‘Are you sure you don’t want to take two hundred and fifty dollars?’

Everyone outside the markets heard Da Tian Ting's words, and they laughed.

Da Tian Ting didn't notice her words sounded like she was insulting the grudge holding man.

Feng Kai Ze was embarrassed seeing everyone laugh at his expense. He pushed his bike faster away from the crazy foolish woman. How old was she? Didn't she know giving him two hundred and fifty dollars was insulting him? In his books, her insult was another strike against her.

Da Tian Ting wanted to chase after Feng Kai Ze. But everyone's laughter made her embarrassed to chase him. She didn't know what they were laughing about.

A couple walked past Da Tian Ting, and they spoke loud enough for her to hear.

'What do you call a woman who insults an idiot and chases after the idiot?' the man asked.

'Of course an idiot,' the woman said.

Da Tian Ting understood her mistake. She didn't intend to insult the man. She only wanted to pay him back half the money she owed him.

Da Tian Ting sighed. The next time she saw the man again, she would pay him back the five hundred dollars and apologise for her careless words.

Da Tian Ting pushed her bike to another parking lot, she paid the parking ticket and walked into the markets.

Inside the crowded markets, Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting didn't notice they were walking in the same direction.

Da Tian Ting held her old bag, and thought about her foolish past. She used to shop at Shang Duan Hua's favorite shops, and spent her money on him. It was time for her to browse in different shops to look for things she liked.

A moment later, a thief snatched Da Tian Ting's old bag and ran off.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Fourteen

**Share this:**

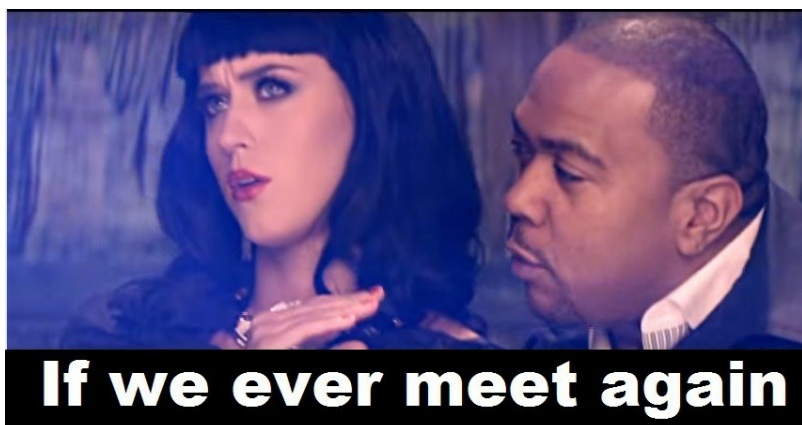
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## ***Related***

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Fifteen

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter Fifteen



Da Tian Ting lost her balance. She fell on the ground, and dropped her grocery bags.

The thief ran off and bumped into Feng Kai Ze. Feng Kai Ze saw the thief had snatched the crazy woman's old bag, and didn't bother to stop the thief or help the crazy woman stand up.

Da Tian Ting thought the man would help her chase the thief. But he walked past her without looking back. She thought it was a waste for him to be born with height and strength. He was the opposite of a Good Samaritan.

'Hey!' Da Tian Ting called. 'Are you a man? The thief bumped into you. Even if you didn't want to stop the thief, you could have done the decent thing to ask if I'm OK.'

Feng Kai Ze turned around, and looked at the crazy woman.

'Miss, we're strangers,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Why do I need to ask if you're OK?'

'How can you say we're strangers?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting reasoned it was the third time she and the grudge holding man bumped into each other. How could they be considered strangers?

‘Miss, do you know my name?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘We don’t know each other’s names,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘But we have met each other a couple of times. How can you say we’re strangers?’

‘Met each other a couple of times?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Now I remember. Wasn’t it you who called me an idiot?’

‘It’s a misunderstanding,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I didn’t mean to insult you. I only wanted to give you back half the money I owe you.’

‘It doesn’t matter if it’s a misunderstanding,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You and I are strangers. Bye, and I hope we don’t meet again.’

Feng Kai Ze turned around and walked away.

‘Hey!’ Da Tian Ting called. ‘Rotten man! Why do I keep meeting rotten men like you?’

Da Tian Ting wanted to know if good men were an extinct breed.

The bystanders thought Da Tian Ting was a crazy woman talking to herself. They avoided her, and didn’t help her stand up.

Da Tian Ting didn’t care about the people looking at her like she was crazy. She looked at her bleeding scraped hands. Then she looked at her ripped pants, her legs were scraped too.

Da Tian Ting propped herself off the ground. She ignored her pain, picked up her fallen essentials and walked to her bike.

No one cared if Da Tian Ting was hurt. It made her realise what a heartless world she lived in, and not having at least one person truly caring about her was an unbearable pain.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Fifteen

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## ***Related***

[November 16, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapters Sixteen to Seventeen

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapters Sixteen to Seventeen



Chapter Sixteen

Shang Duan Hua drove Da Ming Sheng to buy a wedding dress. He braked suddenly when he saw Da Tian Ting on the streets.

‘Duan Hua, why did you stop the car?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

Shang Duan Hua unbuckled his seatbelt, he got out of the car and ran to Da Tian Ting.

Da Ming Sheng got out of the car and chased after Shang Duan Hua. It took her a lot of scheming to get Shang Duan Hua to agree to marry her. She wasn’t going to let anyone take him away from her.

‘Tian Ting, how did you injure yourself like this?’ Shang Duan Hua asked. ‘I’ll take you to the hospital.’

Da Tian Ting laughed at her situation. Her ex-fiance appeared when she didn't want to see him.

'Mr Shang, stay out of my business,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Why are you treating me like a stranger?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

'Shang Duan Hua, we're strangers,' Da Tian Ting said. 'After you betrayed me, do you expect us to be friends? Mr Shang, how many broken up couples do you know who are still friends? It's impossible for us to be friends.'

Shang Duan Hua wanted to chase after Da Tian Ting, but Da Ming Sheng held onto his arm.

'Duan Hua, didn't you say you want to take me to buy a wedding dress?' Da Ming Sheng asked. 'Let's go. We have our pre-wedding shoot tomorrow.'

'It can wait,' Shang Duan Hua said.

'It can't wait,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'The wedding boutiques will close soon.'

'Ming Sheng!' Shang Duan Hua called.

Shang Duan Hua chose to leave Da Tian Ting, but he didn't understand why he couldn't let her go.

'Duan Hua, why can't you let go of big sister?' Da Ming Sheng asked. 'Do you consider how hurt I feel seeing you have lingering feelings for big sister?'

'Ming Sheng, I'm sorry,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'I don't know what I was thinking. Let's go and buy your wedding dress.'

Shang Duan Hua didn't want to look back at what he abandoned.

Da Tian Ting walked a long distance. She turned around, and saw Shang Duan Hua open the passenger door for Da Ming Sheng. She didn't want to look back at the fickle and heartless Shang Duan Hua anymore.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Seventeen**

Da Tian Ting knew she shouldn't care. But her eyes didn't listen, and tears flowed down her cheeks.



‘Da Tian Ting, it’s not worth crying over a heartless man,’ Da Tian Ting said to herself. ‘You and Shang Duan Hua are strangers. You should walk away, and move on with your life.’

Da Tian Ting felt like it took her forever to return to her apartment. She put her grocery bags on the floor, and sterilized her wounds.

Da Tian Ting chanted to herself to forget the painful past, because tomorrow was a fresh start.

The following morning, Da Tian Ting woke up early, dressed and went to work.

Da Tian Ting didn’t care if her manager cursed her for skipping a day off work or deduct her monthly pay, because she saved a lot of money.

‘Da Tian Ting, how can you be so irresponsible?’ Miss Ma asked. ‘You didn’t even call to say you won’t coming into work yesterday. Don’t you want to work here anymore? If you don’t then tell me so I can find someone to replace you.’

‘Manager Ma, of course I want to work here,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Look at my hands and legs. How could I come into work yesterday if I was injured?’

Da Tian Ting prayed for forgiveness for lying.

Miss Ma’s heart softened after seeing Da Tian Ting’s injuries.

‘Even if you’re injured, you should have called in sick,’ Miss Ma said. ‘If all employees are irresponsible like you then the company would close down their doors.’

‘Manager Ma, I’m sorry,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘It’s good you admitted your mistake,’ Miss Ma said. ‘I’m deducting your monthly bonus for this month. Get back to work.’

‘Yes manager Ma,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting went back to her desk after being told off by her manager. She sorted through the pile of paper work accumulated from skipping one day off work.

Ding Xiao Ran saw Da Tian Ting back at work, and went to Da Tian Ting’s desk.

‘Tian Ting, you won’t at work yesterday,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘What

happened?’

‘Nothing,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I was robbed.’

Da Tian Ting didn’t keep anything valuable in her stolen old bag. A day ago she was sad about her ex-fiance. But in the morning, she felt refreshed.

‘What?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked. ‘You were robbed? What did you lose? Are you OK?’

Ding Xiao Ran’s loud voice attracted the attention of the other employees.

‘Tian Ting, where was your fiance?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked. ‘Isn’t he always with you? How can he let you be robbed?’

‘I don’t have a fiance anymore,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘What do you mean you don’t have a fiance?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Sixteen to Seventeen

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Eighteen to Nineteen

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Eighteen to Nineteen



### Chapter Eighteen

‘We’re at work,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘If you want to be fired then keep raising your voice.’

‘Tian Ting, I’m only worried about you,’ Ding Xiao Ran said in a softer voice. ‘Tell me what happened.’

‘I’ll tell you about it during lunch,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Right now I have a lot of work to do. If you’re free then help me.’

‘Since we’re old friends, I’ll help you because you’re injured,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘You’re lucky to have a good friend like me.’

Ding Xiao Ran grabbed one third of the work papers on Da Tian Ting’s desk,

and returned to her desk.

Da Tian Ting opened a drawer and took out her phone. She received messages from Shang Duan Hua and her uncle.

All of Shang Duan Hua's messages asked Da Tian Ting the same question. He asked her when she would inform his parents about ending their engagement.

Da Tian Ting understood why Shang Duan Hua stopped her in the streets. He didn't care about her. He only wanted to ask her to tell his parents that she broke up with him. It was the last time she let him hurt her. Her love for him was dead.

Da Tian Ting called Shang Duan Hua's father's phone.

'Uncle Shang, I'm ending my engagement with Duan Hua,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Uncle Shang can ask Duan Hua why. When I'm free, I'll come visit uncle Shang and aunty Lam. Bye.'

Da Tian Ting hung up, and switched off her phone. She was happy everything ended.

At the Shang home, Shang Ming lost his appetite after receiving bad news from Da Tian Ting.

'Duan Hua, tell me what happened between you and Tian Ting,' Shang Ming said.

'Dad, what did Tian Ting say?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

Shang Duan Hua thought Da Tian Ting ending their engagement was what he wanted. Why did he feel upset she actually ended their engagement?

'What did you do?' Shang Ming asked. 'Da Tian Ting did everything to make you happy in the last ten years. Why did she suddenly call me to tell me that she's ending the engagement? If you don't confess, you can forget about me handing over the company to you.'

'Dad, you and mum only know how to pressure me to marry Da Tian Ting,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'Have you ever asked me what I wanted? The woman I love is Da Ming Sheng. It was dad and mum who forced me to be engaged to Da Tian Ting.'

## Chapter Nineteen

Lam Shu Pan walked into the dining room, and heard her husband and son arguing.

‘Duan Hua, why are you fighting with your dad?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘Your lowlife son said he hates Tian Ting and wants to end their engagement,’ Shang Ming said.

‘Mum, it’s Tian Ting who ended our engagement,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘You better find a way to fix this,’ Shang Ming said. ‘If you don’t marry Tian Ting, you can forget about managing the company.’

‘Dad!’ Shang Duan Hua called.

Shang Duan Hua hated being forced to marry someone he didn’t want to.

‘Duan Hua, tell me what happened,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Mum, I hate Tian Ting,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘If everyone forces me to marry Tian Ting, I’ll go crazy. The wedding is still happening except the bride is Ming Sheng. Mum, dad, don’t you want me to be happy? I’ll be miserable if I marry Tian Ting.’

‘Look at your son,’ Shang Ming said. ‘Look at what your son turned into because you coddled him.’

‘I don’t think Duan Hua is doing anything wrong,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘I’ve known years ago that Duan Hua hates Tian Ting. Don’t you care about your son wants?’

‘Lam Shu Ran, you sure know how to forget a debt after Tian Ting’s father died,’ Shang Ming said.

‘I haven’t forgotten,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘But we don’t need to sacrifice our son to repay a debt. If you care about Tian Ting, don’t force Duan Hua to marry Tian Ting. If you do, Tian Ting will suffer in a loveless marriage.’

Shang Ming agreed with his wife. He didn’t want their son and Da Tian Ting to have a loveless marriage.

‘If you don’t know what a loveless marriage looks like, turn on the TV,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘You’ll see in drama series, couples who have a loveless marriage have sad endings.’

Shang Ming promised Da Tian Ting’s father on his deathbed that Shang Duan Hua would marry Da Tian Ting. Shang Duan Hua was together with Da Tian Ting for ten years so Shang Ming reasoned he kept his promise.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Eighteen to Nineteen

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

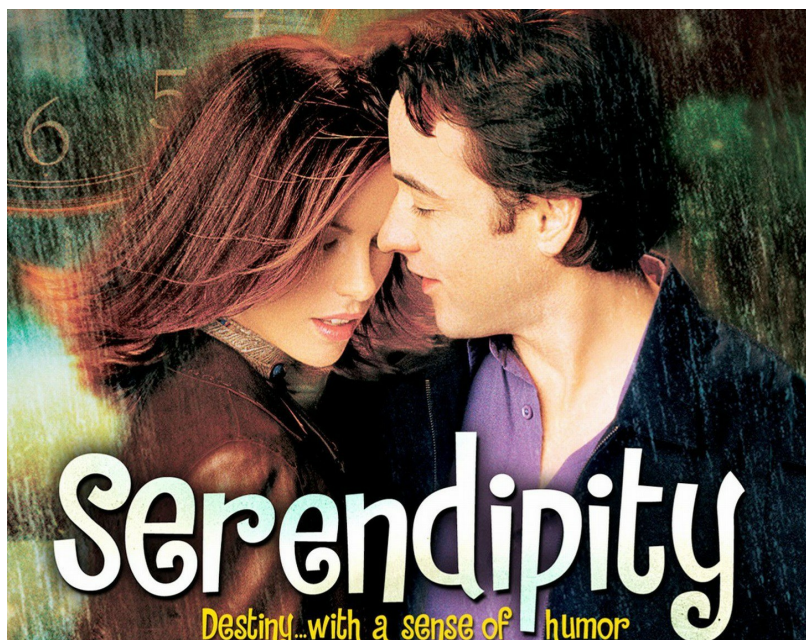
## *Related*

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## 20 – 21

### UVB – Chapters Twenty to Twenty-One

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



#### Chapters Twenty to Twenty-One

#### Chapter Twenty

Da Tian Ting and Ding Xiao Ran went to a cafe for lunch. Da Tian Ting explained why she took a day off work.

‘That slime!’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘I can’t believe I thought he was trustworthy. What a slime!’

‘Xiao Ran, keep your voice down,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You’re embarrassing me.’

‘He makes me so angry,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘Doesn’t he have a conscience? You were his slave for ten years. It looks like you’ll be my bridesmaid before I can be your bridesmaid.’

‘Forget it,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’m happy it’s over. If I had married him, I would be miserable. You can eat first. I’m going to wash my hands.’

‘Do you want me to come with you?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked. ‘I don’t want you to slip in the bathroom, because your leg injuries haven’t healed yet.’

‘I’ll be OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll walk slowly.’

Da Tian Ting limped to the bathroom. It was her unlucky day. She slipped in front of the bathroom door. Her head, back and bottom hurt.

Feng Kai Ze stepped out of the bathroom. It was his unlucky day. He saw the crazy woman lying on the floor, and walked past her.

Da Tian Ting spotted the grudge holding man. After what happened at the markets, she didn’t expect him to help her stand up. She laid on the ground, rubbed her sore head and waited for Ding Xiao Ran to come find her.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t hear the crazy woman calling him for help. He was worried she was unconscious so he walked back to where she was lying on the floor.

‘Why didn’t you ask me to help you today?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I didn’t want to inconvenience your rotten heart,’ Da Tian Ting said.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Twenty-One**

‘Today I need to go to the airport,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Next time I’ll settle the score with you.’

Feng Kai Ze turned around and walked away from the crazy woman again.

‘Rotten man!’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting couldn’t bend her knees to stand up. It was the grudge holding man’s fault. Every time she met him, it was an unlucky day.

Ding Xiao Ran went to the bathroom to look for Da Tian Ting. She was worried to see Da Tian Ting lying on the floor.

‘Tian Ting, are you OK?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked.

Feng Kai Ze heard someone called Tian Ting’s name, and froze on the spot. He turned around and looked closely at the crazy woman’s face. Was the crazy woman Da Tian Ting?



‘Tian Ting, why are you lying on the floor?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked.

‘I accidentally slipped,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I’ll check if you’re injured anywhere,’ Ding Xiao Ran said.

‘It’s OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Help me stand up, and we can go back to work.’

‘You’re not OK,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘I’m taking you to the hospital. Your knee wounds reopened, and bleeding.’

Ding Xiao Ran helped Da Tian Ting stand.

‘I don’t need to go to the hospital,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I have painkillers in my bag. I just need to bandage my knees. We need to get back to work.’

‘OK,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘I’ll help bandage your knees.’

‘Thank you Xiao Ran,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze stood on the same spot. He was shocked he finally found Da Tian Ting.

‘Sir, move out of the way,’ Ding Xiao Ran said.

Feng Kai Ze’s eyes only saw Da Tian Ting’s face.

‘Sir, you’re in the way,’ Ding Xiao Ran said.

Feng Kai Ze had met Da Tian Ting again on his first day back in his mum’s hometown. Why didn’t he recognise her face sooner?

‘Rotten man, why are you staring at me?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Move out of the way!’

‘Whoa,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘Da Tian Ting, we’ve known each other for years. This is the first time I’ve seen you lose your temper.’

Da Tian Ting? Feng Kai Ze found his fierce apple. He wanted to find out everything about his fierce apple’s life.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Twenty to Twenty-One

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## ***Related***

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapters Twenty-Two to Twenty-Three

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapters Twenty-Two to Twenty-Three



Chapter Twenty-Two

Feng Kai Ze watched his fierce apple walk past him. Then he asked the floor manager if he knew his fierce apple.

‘Sir, do you know those two women who left?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Do you mean Miss Da and Miss Ding?’ the floor manager asked. ‘They are regulars. They work in the building across the road.’

Feng Kai Ze looked out the window. The building belonged to Tian Chen’s company.

Across the cafe, Ding Xiao Ran helped to bandage Da Tian Ting’s knees at work. Then Da Tian Ting worked like crazy. She had a backlog of work to do, and new work assigned to her.

‘It’s an emergency!’ Lam Ling cried out.

Everyone looked up from their desk. Lam Ling was Tian Chen’s company’s gossip queen. But Lam Ling’s gossip were reliable.

‘What emergency?’ a chorus of employees asked.

‘Ten minutes ago, Feng’s company announced they’re having an audit of all Tian Chen’s company’s employees’ files,’ Lam Ling said.

Everyone looked worriedly at each other.

‘Why does Feng’s company want to see everyone’s files?’ the employees asked together.

‘I heard someone here offended Feng’s company’s executive,’ Lam Ling said. ‘It makes sense why they want to see everyone’s files. They want to find the identity of the person who offended their executive so they can take revenge.’

‘Only someone who has a death wish would offend Feng’s company’s executive,’ the first employee said.

‘I’m lucky I’m not the offender,’ the second employee said.

‘I’m lucky too,’ the third employee said.

Da Tian Ting ignored the gossip. Working was her priority. Besides, she didn’t offend anyone at Feng’s company.

‘Tian Ting, who do you think the offender is?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked.

‘Go ask a ghost,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘The offender isn’t me. I have nothing to worry about.’

‘Of course it’s not you,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘You’ve always been a cautious person, and avoided meeting anyone in a high position. In your world there is only Shang Duan Hua... Tian Ting, I’m sorry. I shouldn’t have mentioned him.’

‘Xiao Ran, I’m over it,’ Tian Ting said. ‘Right now I need your help. If you’re free, help me with this endless pile of paper work.’

‘OK,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘I’ll come help you now.’

\*\*\*

## Chapter Twenty-Three

Feng Kai Ze opened Da Tian Ting's diary, and read a couple of pages.

20<sup>th</sup> May xxxx

Today little monkey fainted during P.E. The teachers carried him to the nurse's office. I followed the teachers. Outside the nurse's office, I overheard the doctor said little monkey fainted because he's malnourished.

21<sup>st</sup> May xxxx

Today I took two milk cartons from the fridge to school. I drank one, and snuck the second one in little monkey's bag. After school, I was happy to see little monkey drank the whole milk carton because I didn't want little monkey to faint again.

Feng Kai Ze closed Da Tian Ting's diary, and smiled. He thought it was ironic the crazy woman he kept meeting was his fierce apple.

Feng Kai Ze spent years looking for his fierce apple. He finally found his fierce apple.

Feng Kai Ze looked at Da Tian Ting's personnel file.

'Fierce apple, your little monkey is back,' Feng Kai Ze said to the photo of Da Tian Ting. 'Did you miss me?'

When Feng Kai Ze was a little boy, he was skinny. Da Tian Ting nicknamed him little monkey. Da Tian Ting was fierce and had an apple face. He nicknamed her fierce apple.

Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting knew they were fire and water since the first day they met each other. They fought every time they saw each other. When they were children, he thought she hated him and looked down on him like their classmates because he didn't have a father.

Feng Kai Ze didn't know Da Tian Ting secretly protected and cared about him. When their classmates picked on him, she fought with them and warned them to leave him alone. She was injured but she didn't regret protecting him. Since that day, their classmates didn't pick on him and occasionally he and Da Tian Ting had arguments. It made him misunderstand that she hated him.

Feng Kai Ze found out the truth after he stole Da Tian Ting's diary. If she didn't secretly protect him, put food in his bag and exchanged lunch boxes with him then he would have been a miserable malnourished little boy.

'Fierce apple, this time let your little monkey protect you,' Feng Kai Ze said to the photo of Da Tian Ting.

Feng Kai Ze thought it was fated he reunited with Da Tian Ting on the day she was dumped by her fiancé Shang Duan Hua.

Feng Kai Ze called Yang Fei's phone.

'Yang Fei, you have two hours to find out about Shang Duan Hua's background,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Yang Fei didn't know what Feng Kai Ze was thinking. Out of the blue Feng Kai Ze asked him to audit all of Tian Chen's company's employees' files. Then Feng Kai Ze wanted him to investigate Shang Duan Hua's background within two hours.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Twenty-Two to Twenty-Three

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## 24 – 25

### UVB – Chapters Twenty-Four to Twenty-Five

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Twenty-Four to Twenty-Five



#### Chapter Twenty-Four

Da Tian Ting worked overtime. Ding Xiao Ran had a date with her boyfriend. So Da Tian Ting walked out of the work building alone.

On the streets, Da Tian Ting walked past a couple.

‘Next time don’t work overtime this late,’ the man said. ‘It’s dangerous at night.’

‘I have you to protect me,’ the woman said.

The loving couple made Da Tian Ting see clearer how much Shang Duan Hua

hated her. In the past she often worked overtime. Shang Duan Hua never once picked her up from work. He was inconsiderate of her, and never gave her a gift. She was foolish to trade her love for his hate. Her tears reminded her not be hurt because of a lowlife like him again.

Da Tian Ting held her head high, and hailed a taxi.

Feng Kai Ze stopped his car on the road beside Da Tian Ting.

‘Hop in,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll take you home.’

Da Tian Ting was suspicious of the grudge holding man’s sweet tone of voice.

‘Rotten man, what do you want?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze only had himself to blame. If he was nicer to Da Tian Ting during the times they met then she wouldn’t be weary of him.

‘My conscience didn’t let me sleep,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I thought about how I was wrong to leave you stranded when you were injured. Let me make it up to you. Hop in, and I’ll give you a lift home.’

‘Whether you have a conscience or not, has nothing to do with me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Bye. I hope we don’t meet again.’

Da Tian Ting stuck out her tongue at the man, and hopped into a taxi.

Feng Kai Ze followed Da Tian Ting’s taxi home. He wished he was nice to Da Tian Ting starting from the day he met her at the bar.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Twenty-Five**

Da Tian Ting got out of the taxi, and limped to her apartment. Each step put pressure on her injured knees.

Feng Kai Ze followed behind Da Tian Ting. He hated seeing her limp and in pain. He wanted to help her, but didn’t know what to say for her to let him help her.

Feng Kai Ze wished he left a good first impression on Da Tian Ting. He considered telling her that he was her little monkey. But he wasn’t certain she would forgive him.

‘Fierce apple!’ Feng Kai Ze called.



Da Tian Ting put her key in her apartment door lock. She heard someone called her nickname from her childhood. She turned around and looked suspiciously at the grudge holding man.

‘What did you call me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘You’re fierce and have an apple face,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘My nickname for you is fierce apple.’

‘Mr crazy, I’m warning you, you’re not allowed to call me fierce apple!’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting lost her temper, and made Feng Kai Ze uneasy.

‘Why?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Because I hate that nickname,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Do you hate being called fierce apple or do you hate the person who nicknamed you fierce apple?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I hate both... wait,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Mr Crazy why did you follow me home?’

Da Tian Ting was suspicious why Mr Crazy didn’t want to accept five hundred dollars from her, and followed her home at night.

Da Tian Ting’s arms protected her chest, and Mr Crazy laughed.

‘Why are you laughing?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘How long has it been since you looked in the mirror?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze wasn’t mocking Da Tian Ting. He was laughing because she thought he was after her body when he wanted something else from her.

‘I look at myself in the mirror every day,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Why?’

Feng Kai Ze thought Da Tian Ting’s old baggy clothes didn’t suit her figure or her age.

‘When you look in the mirror, don’t you feel unfeminine?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Da Tian Ting understood Mr Crazy’s words. She unlocked the front door, walked into her apartment and looked directly at his eyes.

‘Mr Crazy, if you think I look unfeminine then stay away from me,’ Da Tian Ting

said. ‘I don’t want to contaminate your eyes.’

Da Tian Ting closed and locked the front door.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Four to Twenty-Five

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Twenty-Six to Twenty-Seven

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Twenty-Six to Twenty-Seven



#### Chapter Twenty-Six

Da Tian Ting looked in the mirror. She did look unfeminine. She thought about Mr Crazy and Shang Duan Hua's insults and felt sad.

Da Tian Ting cried for her past foolish self. She wasted money on Shang Duan Hua, and didn't buy luxury items for herself like skincare products and good fabrics.

Da Ming Sheng was the opposite of Da Tian Ting. Da Ming Sheng spent her monthly allowance on makeup, clothes, shoes and facials.

Da Tian Ting had a good cry on her bed. No one was in her home to judge her. After a good cry, she would be back to her normal self.

Da Tian Ting didn't notice Feng Kai Ze was walking toward her bed.

Feng Kai Ze was sad to see Da Tian Ting crying. Was she heart-broken over Shang Duan Hua? He wanted to Shang Duan Hua to disappear from her heart, because he wanted to be the only man in her heart.

Feng Kai Ze passed Da Tian Ting a tissue.

Da Tian Ting was lost in her heartbreak, and automatically accepted the tissue.

‘Thank you... ah!’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Mr Crazy, stay where you are. How did you come into my home?’

Da Tian Ting remembered she locked the front door.

‘You forgot to lock the front door,’ Feng Kai Ze lied.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t want to admit he had a key to her apartment.

‘I didn’t lock the door?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘It doesn’t matter. Get out of my home!’

‘It’s not worth crying over a man who doesn’t love you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Mr Crazy, I remembered you said we’re strangers and my business has nothing to do with you,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Get lost!’

Da Tian Ting was suspicious why Mr Crazy acted like he cared about her.

‘I care about you because I feel responsible for your injured knees,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Starting today, your business is my business. Tomorrow you’re taking sick leave. I’ll come pick you up in the morning, and take you to the hospital. Goodnight.’

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Twenty-Seven**

Da Tian Ting watched Mr Crazy leave her bedroom. She had no idea what he meant by her business was his business.

Da Tian Ting didn’t understand why Mr Crazy intruded into her home to give her a tissue and leave. He wasn’t after her body, which meant he was coo-coo. She was going to keep her distance from the unlucky Mr Crazy.

In the morning Da Tian Ting woke up from a goodnight sleep, and forgot about Mr Crazy. She got dressed, and walked out of her home to head to work.

‘Mr Crazy... why are you standing outside my home?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

If Da Tian Ting didn’t have a healthy heart then seeing Mr Crazy standing

outside her home early in the morning would have given her a heart attack.

Da Tian Ting checked out Mr Crazy. He leaned against a wall, crossed his toned arms and looked smooth in his pair of shades. It was a pity an attractive man like him was coo-coo. Crazy or not, she didn't want to admit he was a lot more attractive than Shang Duan Hua.

Da Tian Ting accepted between a beautiful rose and manure, everyone would choose a beautiful rose. It made sense why Shang Duan Hua chose Da Ming Sheng over her.

Within a minute, Feng Kai Ze saw Da Tian Ting looked admiringly at him then she looked pensive and sad. He couldn't keep up with her yo-yo thoughts.

'Ready?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Ready for what?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Did you forget?' Feng Kai Ze asked. 'Last night I told you that you're taking sick leave today, and I'm taking you to the hospital to have your knees checked.'

'Yes,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I've forgotten last night.'

'Starting from this moment, you need to remember everything I say to you,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Why do I need to?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Because I'm your man,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Huh?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn't know why Mr Crazy suddenly made a love declaration. She felt his indifference when they first met was more bearable than his craziness.

'Mr Crazy, if you want to be crazy, don't involve me,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I'm going to work. I don't have free time to waste on you. Bye.'

Da Tian Ting walked past Feng Kai Ze. Suddenly he lifted her into his arms.

'I'm giving you two options,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You can choose to come willingly with me to the hospital or you can choose for me to carry you to my car and drive you to the hospital.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Twenty-Six to Twenty-Seven

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Twenty-Eight

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Twenty-Eight



‘Take your paws off me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting hated being hugged by people, especially strangers. In the last ten years, she let Shang Duan Hua hug her less than the number of fingers on one hand.

‘Don’t waste time,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Choose an option.’

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting closer to him, and refused to let her feet touch the floor.

Da Tian Ting could feel Feng Kai Ze’s body muscles, and knew he worked out. She didn’t care if he was physically stronger than her.

‘I choose the third option,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting wanted Mr Crazy to let go of her.

‘I only gave you two options,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘There is no third option. I’m giving you three seconds to choose. If you don’t choose, I’ll help you choose.’

‘Huh?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Three,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Hey!’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Don’t forget we’re strangers.’

‘Two,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘I told you we’re strangers,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Stop counting, and get lost!’

‘One,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You’re crazy!’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze chose the second option for Da Tian Ting. He carried her to his car.

‘Mr Crazy, what are you doing?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Put me down! If you don’t put me down, you’re dead meat.’

Da Tian Ting was tempted to dig her fingernails into his face, and ruin his good looks. But she restrained her fingernails, because it would be a pity to ruin flawless skin.

‘If you don’t listen to me, I’ll kiss you all the way to the hospital,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You wouldn’t dare!’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I always keep my word,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze stopped in front of his car, lowered his head and pretended he was about to kiss Da Tian Ting’s lips.

Da Tian Ting covered Feng Kai Ze’s mouth.

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll come with you to the hospital.’

Feng Kai Ze grinned, put Da Tian Ting down and held her nose.

‘Don’t try any tricks,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If you don’t come with me to the hospital to have a thorough body examination, I’ll think of a way to make you regret it.’

Da Tian Ting pushed Mr Crazy’s chest, and sat in the front passenger seat.

‘Hurry up and drive,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘It’s you who is going to regret taking me to the hospital.’

‘I’ve never regretted anything in my life,’ Feng Kai Ze said and sat on the driver seat.

‘How can you not see that you’re acting crazy?’ Da Tian Ting asked.



‘My name is Feng Kai Ze,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Remember my name, and you’re not allowed to call me Mr Crazy or rotten man.’

Da Tian Ting didn’t know why Feng Kai Ze’s name sounded familiar to her like she should know his name. She looked at him up and down, and pitied his brain didn’t match his looks.

Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting were lost in their own world that they never noticed the strangers who they passed by on the way to his car.

The strangers didn’t understand why a young attractive man like Feng Kai Ze was with an old maid like Da Tian Ting.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Twenty-Eight

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## 29 – 30

### UVB – Chapters Twenty-Nine to Thirty

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



#### Chapters Twenty-Nine to Thirty



#### Chapter Twenty-Nine

‘Mr Crazy, confess,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Is this car really yours?’

Da Tian Ting didn’t think Feng Kai Ze could afford a flashy car.

‘Remember my name is Feng Kai Ze,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze wanted Da Tian Ting’s heart to be plastered with his name.

‘What’s the difference between Mr Crazy and Mr Feng?’ Da Tian Ting asked.  
‘You’re still the same person.’

‘Feng Kai Ze,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Later when the owner reports their car is stolen to the cops, remember you stealing their car has nothing to do with me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t remember his fierce apple being that chatty.

‘You look poorer than me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘How can this car really be yours? Confess, you’re not taking me to the hospital and you want to use me to take the fall for stealing this car.’

Sitting in the car, felt like Da Tian Ting was Feng Kai Ze’s accomplice.

Feng Kai Ze thought of an excuse to satisfy Da Tian Ting.

‘I borrowed this car from a friend,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You should have told me the truth from the start,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You made me worried for nothing.’

‘Sit comfortably and talk less,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Don’t think I’m scared of you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Everything about Feng Kai Ze’s friend’s car was priceless from the seatbelt to the door handles. It was flashier than Shang Duan Hua’s car. Shang Duan Hua never let Da Tian Ting sit in his car, she always looked at his car from the outside. She used to think Shang Duan Hua didn’t like people sitting in his car, but she finally understood that he didn’t want her to sit in his car. Thinking about how much Shang Duan Hua hated her made her lose interest in Feng Kai Ze’s friend’s car.

Feng Kai Ze wanted to distract Da Tian Ting from her depressing thoughts. He buckled her seatbelt.

‘Remember to buckle your seatbelt,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

For a second Da Tian Ting felt Feng Kai Ze cared about her. But she thought it must have been her imagination.

Da Tian Ting realised she spent more time with Feng Kai Ze in the last few days than the whole time Shang Duan Hua spent with her in the last ten years. If she was brutally honest, Shang Duan Hua treated her more like a distant acquaintance than a fiancée.

\*\*\*

## Chapter Thirty

Da Tian Ting believed Feng Kai Ze did want to take her to the hospital after he

parked his friend's car in the hospital's parking lot.

Feng Kai Ze unbuckled Da Tian Ting's seatbelt, and got out of the car.

'Come out,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Mr Feng, are you sure you don't have an appointment at the hospital?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'I'm sure you're getting a thorough body examination,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'My body is in good condition,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I don't need to go to the hospital.'

'Are you sure your knees are in good condition?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze talking to Da Tian Ting in the car distracted her from the pain in her knees.

'Mr Feng, no one will accuse you of being mute if you talk less,' Da Tian Ting said. 'My knees will be OK in another couple of days. I don't need to go to the hospital.'

Da Tian Ting got out of the car. She took a step toward the taxi bay, and Feng Kai Ze startled her by carrying her in his arms again.

'What are you doing?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'Put me down. This is a public place. It's embarrassing to have strangers stare.'

'I don't care about strangers staring,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You can't change my mind once I've made a decision. I'm taking you to the hospital for a check-up.'

Da Tian Ting didn't want to cause a bigger scene with Mr Crazy. It was embarrassing enough having strangers stare at her.

Feng Kai Ze carried Da Tian Ting into the hospital.

'Sir, do you need help?' a nurse asked.

Feng Kai Ze put Da Tian Ting down.

'Take her for a check-up,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Including each strand of her hair.'

The nurse felt like if she didn't follow Feng Kai Ze's instructions then her life would be over.

‘Yes sir,’ the nurse said.

‘Mr Feng, it’s up to me whether I want a body chek-up or not,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting had a problem with people ordering her around.

‘I get a say about everything that involves you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Give me one good reason why,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Because I’m your man,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You’ve said that before,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘What proof do you have that you’re my man?’

Feng Kai Ze’s arm pulled Da Tian Ting to him, and his lips kissed her untouched lips without warning.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Twenty-Nine to Thirty

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## 31 – 32

### UVB – Chapters Thirty-One to Thirty-Two

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



#### Chapters Thirty-One to Thirty-Two



#### Chapter Thirty-One

Feng Kai Ze didn't care who witnessed him kissing Da Tian Ting. He wanted to declare to the world that he was her man. For sixteen years he didn't stop thinking about her. If that meant he loved her then he wanted to love her to the end of his life.

Da Tian Ting was the only woman who moved Feng Kai Ze's heart.

Da Tian Ting regained her senses. She pulled away from Feng Kai Ze and punched his chest.

'You Casanova, go to hell!' Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's hands.

'If you don't have a check-up, I'll...' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Casanova!' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting suddenly had a brainstorm, and smiled at Mr Crazy.

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll have a check-up.’

Feng Kai Ze had a feeling Da Tian Ting was too compliant.

‘Go with the nurse for your check-up,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll fill out your forms.’

‘Thank you Mr Feng,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting followed the nurse. Da Tian Ting planned to make Feng Kai Ze have a psychiatric check-up. After he was admitted to the psychiatric ward, he won’t bother her again.

In the examination room, Da Tian Ting sat opposite the doctor.

‘Doctor, my boyfriend needs a psychiatric check-up,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Nurse, my boyfriend is the man you saw kissing me outside. He lost his mind after years of buying non-winning lottery tickets. I tricked him to come to the hospital by lying to him that I need a check-up. The truth is I want him to have a psychiatric check-up.’

The doctor didn’t know if Da Tian Ting was telling the truth.

‘Doctor, my boyfriend looks like a normal person,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘But the smallest thing can set him off. Like if I don’t call him Mr Feng. Doctor, you need to ask security guards to take him to the psychiatric ward. Any minute now, he’ll start destroying furniture and assaulting people.’

‘Miss, why don’t I give you a referral and you can make an appointment for your boyfriend?’ the doctor asked.

‘Doctor, my boyfriend won’t admit he’s crazy,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Every time I took him to a psychiatrist’s clinic, he had a crazy episode. Doctor, I need your help.’

Da Tian Ting’s sincere plea persuaded the doctor to believe her.

‘Miss, I’ll help you,’ the doctor said. ‘I’ll ask security guards to take your boyfriend to the psychiatric ward.’

‘Thank you doctor,’ Da Tian Ting said.

\*\*\*

## Chapter Thirty-Two

Feng Kai Ze was filling out Da Tian Ting's hospital forms when security guards grabbed his arms.

'Big brothers, what are you doing?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'We're taking you to the psychiatric ward,' a security guard said.

Feng Kai Ze spotted Da Tian Ting standing nearby and waving at him while the security guards dragged him to the psychiatric ward.

If Da Tian Ting played dirty, Feng Kai Ze was happy to play along. With her in his life, there would never be a dull moment.

'Bye Mr Feng,' Da Tian Ting mouthed to Feng Kai Zei.

Da Tian Ting was happy she would never see Mr Crazy again.

Da Tian Ting walked out of the hospital, and received a phone call from Shang Duan Hua's father.

'Hello uncle Shang,' Da Tian Ting greeted.

'Tian Ting, I want to talk to you about something over dinner,' Shang Ming said.

Da Tian Ting respected Shang Ming as an elder, and accepted his dinner invitation.

Shang Ming hung up the phone, and Lam Shu Pan was worried why he looked so happy.

'Shang Ming, why are you happy?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

'Tian Ting agreed to have dinner here with us,' Shang Ming said.

'It's not the first time Tian Ting is eating dinner here,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Didn't we agree not to force Duan Hua to marry Tian Ting?'

'I only want to ask Tian Ting if ending the engagement is what she wants,' Shang Ming said.

'I'll call Duan Hua to let him know Tian Ting is coming to eat dinner here tonight,' Lam Shu Pan said.



‘Don’t bother,’ Shang Ming said. ‘He hasn’t left Ming Sheng’s side for days. He won’t come home for dinner tonight.’

Lam Shu Pan knew her husband hated Da Ming Sheng. But Lam Shu Pan wanted Shang Duan Hua to have a happy marriage.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Thirty-One to Thirty-Two

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Thirty-Three

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Thirty-Three



After work Da Tian Ting took a taxi to the Shang family home.

Shang Ming waited in front of the apartment building for Da Tian Ting. He was sad to see her limping, and ran to help her walk.

‘Tian Ting, why are you limping?’ Shang Ming asked. ‘How did you injure your legs?’

‘It’s nothing,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I accidentally fell over, and scratched my knees.’

Da Tian Ting put pressure on her knees to walk normally.

‘You should take better care of yourself,’ Shang Ming said. ‘Come inside. Dinner will be ready soon.’

‘Yes uncle Shang,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Lam Shu Pan opened the front door. She held Da Tian Ting’s hand, and helped Da Tian Ting walk to the dining room.

‘Tian Ting, how did you injure yourself?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘I accidentally fell,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’m OK now.’

Da Tian Ting was regretful Shang Ming and Lam Shu Pan couldn’t be her parents. She felt like they were having the last dinner together, because she didn’t want to come to their home after she explained to them why she ended the engagement.

Da Tian Ting hated feeling disappointed she couldn’t see Shang Duan Hua one last time. She knew it was better not to have another confrontation with him.

Lam Shu Pan knew who Da Tian Ting was looking for.

‘Tian Ting, aunty knows you broke off the engagement,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Tian Ting, you love Duan Hua but he doesn’t love you. You’ll be happier if you don’t marry him. Aunty believes a good woman like you will find a good man. Aunty will always see you as my daughter. You can’t forget aunty and uncle.’

‘Aunty Lam, I won’t forget you and uncle Shang,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I came here today because I’ve accepted the situation. I know Duan Tian hates me. I won’t hold onto him, because it’s not good for me, him or Ming Sheng.’

‘Tian Ting, you’re a good woman,’ Shang Ming said. ‘It’s Duan Hua who is blind, and can’t see the difference between a good woman and a bad woman.’

‘I’ll always love uncle Ming and aunty Lam,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I believe I’ll find my own happiness. Perhaps I’ll bring my boyfriend to Duan Hua and Ming Sheng’s wedding.’

Da Tian Ting leaned her head on Lam Shu Pan’s shoulder like how she used to lean on her mum’s shoulder when she was a little girl. She didn’t understand why everything had to change.

‘Tian Ting, aunty wish you’re my daughter,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Aunty, in my heart I’m your daughter,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Good,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Tian Ting is aunty’s daughter.’

Shang Duan Hua brought Da Ming Sheng home for dinner. He was surprised to see Da Tian Ting in the dining room. If he knew Da Tian Ting visited his parents then he wouldn’t have brought Da Ming Sheng home that evening.

**Share this:**

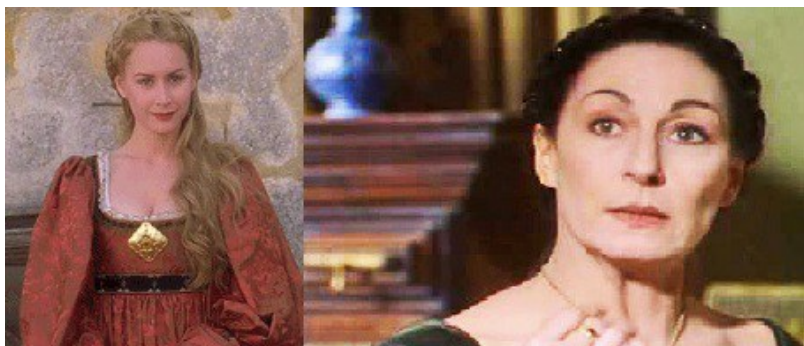
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

### UVB – Chapters Thirty-Four to Thirty-Five

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



#### Chapters Thirty-Four to Thirty-Five



#### Chapter Thirty-Four

Da Ming Sheng acted innocent in front of Shang Duan Hua's parents. She wanted to destroy his parents' bond with Da Tian Ting. She wasn't going to let Da Tian Ting use his parents to force him to marry Da Tian Ting.

Lam Shu Pan looked left and right during the awkward silence.

'Duan Hua, if you wanted to bring a guest home for dinner then you should have called for me to prepare more meals,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Mum, I thought mum and dad were home alone,' Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Duan Hua hated seeing Da Tian Ting when they were engaged. But after Da Tian Ting found out the truth, he felt ashamed to look her in the eye. He felt like he owed her for taking care of him and for betraying her.

Da Tian Ting didn't want to be in the same room with the two people who betrayed her.

'Aunty Lam, I'll go help you in the kitchen,' Da Tian Ting said.

Shang Duan Hua watched Da Tian Ting walk to the kitchen, and knew she was

putting up a brave front.

Da Ming Sheng hated everyone paying attention to Da Tian Ting.

‘Uncle Shang, aunty Lam, it’s good to see both of you,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I hope you’re both well.’

‘We’re good,’ Shang Ming said.

Shang Ming picked up the newspaper, hid his face and acted like he was reading.

Da Ming Sheng didn’t care if Shang Duan Hua’s parents loved Da Tian Ting, because she was Shang Duan Hua’s fiancée instead of Da Tian Ting.

‘Ming Sheng, ignore uncle,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Come here and sit.’

‘Thank you aunty Lam,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘You’re part of the family, you don’t need to say thank you,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

Da Ming Sheng was happy Lam Shu Pan accepted her as the future Mrs Shang.

‘Uncle Shang, aunty Lam, I’ll go into the kitchen too,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I want to make some of your favorite dishes.’

Da Ming Sheng walked demurely to the kitchen, and Lam Shu Pan grabbed Shang Ming’s newspaper.

‘Why can’t you accept Ming Sheng?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘Did I say I can’t accept her?’ Shang Ming asked.

‘Your attitude toward Ming Sheng says enough,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Stop hurting Ming Sheng’s feelings.’

‘I’ll tone down my attitude,’ Shang Ming said.

‘Dad, mum, I’ll go to my room to change clothes,’ Shang Duan Ting said.

\*\*\*

## Chapter Thirty-Five

Da Tian Ting came to the kitchen to avoid Da Ming Sheng. She didn’t expect Da Ming Sheng to come to the kitchen too.

‘Aunty, I’ll help wash the vegetables and herbs,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Big sister, how can you shamelessly come to the Shang family home?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

The Shang Household’s assistants thought Shang Duan Hua would marry Da Tian Ting. They didn’t expect Shang Duan Hua would replace Da Tian Ting with Da Ming Sheng. They felt awkward being in the kitchen with Shang Duan Hua’s ex-fiance and new fiance.

Da Tian Ting acted like she didn’t hear Da Ming Sheng, and washed the vegetables and herbs.

‘Big sister, I’m sorry,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Why are you saying sorry to me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘I’m sorry for stealing Duan Hua from you,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Tian Ting put the vegetables and herbs on the kitchen bench, and she turned around to look at Da Ming Sheng.

‘Do you think saying sorry can make up for you destroying the life I built here for ten years?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Big sister, if I’m Duan Hua, I wouldn’t want to marry you either,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘It doesn’t matter if you love Duan Hua for ten or twenty years, because he’ll never love you. Big sister, you should accept the truth.’

Da Ming Sheng acted pitiful in front of the assistants to make Da Tian Ting look bad.

‘Da Ming Sheng, if you came here to gloat then you succeeded,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You’re right. Duan Hua hates me, and loves you. Are you satisfied?’

‘Big sister, don’t be angry,’ Da Ming Sheng said innocently. ‘I didn’t mean to sound smug. I was only stating the truth.’

‘You schemed to steal my fiance,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘What more do you want?’

‘Big sister, don’t misunderstand,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I didn’t scheme to steal Duan Hua. Duan Hua chose to leave you and be with me.’

‘I don’t believe you,’ Da Tian Ting denied.

Da Tian Ting had seen how different Shang Duan Hua treated her and Da Ming Sheng.

‘Big sister, I’ll prove to you that Duan Hua chose to leave you,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

The assistants pitied Da Ming Sheng. They didn’t want to stay in the tensed kitchen. They kept busy preparing dinner so no one noticed Da Ming Sheng picked up a pot of hot water except Da Tian Ting.

‘What are you doing?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Ming Sheng poured hot water over her arm.

‘Big sister, why didn’t you help me hold this pot of hot water?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘You!’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting didn’t understand why Da Ming Sheng burned her own arm.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Thirty-Four to Thirty-Five

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)



## UVB – Chapter Thirty-Six

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Thirty-Six



Da Tian Ting carried the pot of hot water for Da Ming Sheng.

‘Ah!’ Da Ming Sheng cried out. ‘My arm!’

The assistants looked up from their cutting boards.

‘Miss Ming Sheng, what happened?’ an assistant asked.

‘Big sister, I was wrong to steal Duan Hua from you,’ Da Ming Sheng said pitifully. ‘Big sister, if pouring hot water on my arm will help soothe your anger then my pain is worth it. Big sister, I hope you can forgive me.’

‘What are you saying?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting held the pot of hot water, and didn’t understand why Da Ming Sheng accused her of pouring hot water on Da Ming Sheng’s arm.

The assistants looked at the pot of hot water in Da Tian Ting's hands, and they understood how Da Ming Sheng's arm was burned.

'Miss Ming Sheng, your arm is injured,' an assistant said. 'I'll take you outside to treat your arm.'

'Thank you,' Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng followed the assistant outside, and no one saw her smirk. She was happy in the future the Shang family wouldn't let Da Tian Ting into their home again. She didn't do anything wrong. She was only protecting her own happiness.

In the kitchen, Da Tian Ting held the pot of hot water and thought about why Da Ming Sheng would burn her own arm. Da Tian Ting felt like she fell into Da Ming Sheng's trap.

'Miss Tian Ting, give me the pot of hot water,' an assistant said.

The assistant took the pot of hot water from Da Tian Ting's hand, and put it on the kitchen bench.

Da Tian Ting felt like she was in the way in the kitchen so she walked back to the dining room. She didn't understand why everyone was looking at her with hatred.

Shang Duan Hua glared at Da Tian Ting then he continued to treat Da Ming Sheng's injured arm.

Shang Ming was disappointed in Da Tian Ting's behavior.

'Tian Ting, aunty was wrong about you,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Aunty mistook you for a good person. How can you be this vindictive? Ming Sheng didn't steal Duan Hua from you. Duan Hua left you because he hates you. You shouldn't scoop this low to take revenge.'

'Aunty, what are you talking about?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting lost her temper in the kitchen. But she didn't do anything to harm Da Ming Sheng. She didn't understand why everyone was accusing her of something she didn't do.

'Tian Ting, uncle knows you're hurting,' Shang Ming said. 'But you should

admit what you did is wrong.'

'Uncle Shang, aunty Lam, I don't understand what both of you are talking about,' Da Tian Ting said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Thirty-Six

## Share this:

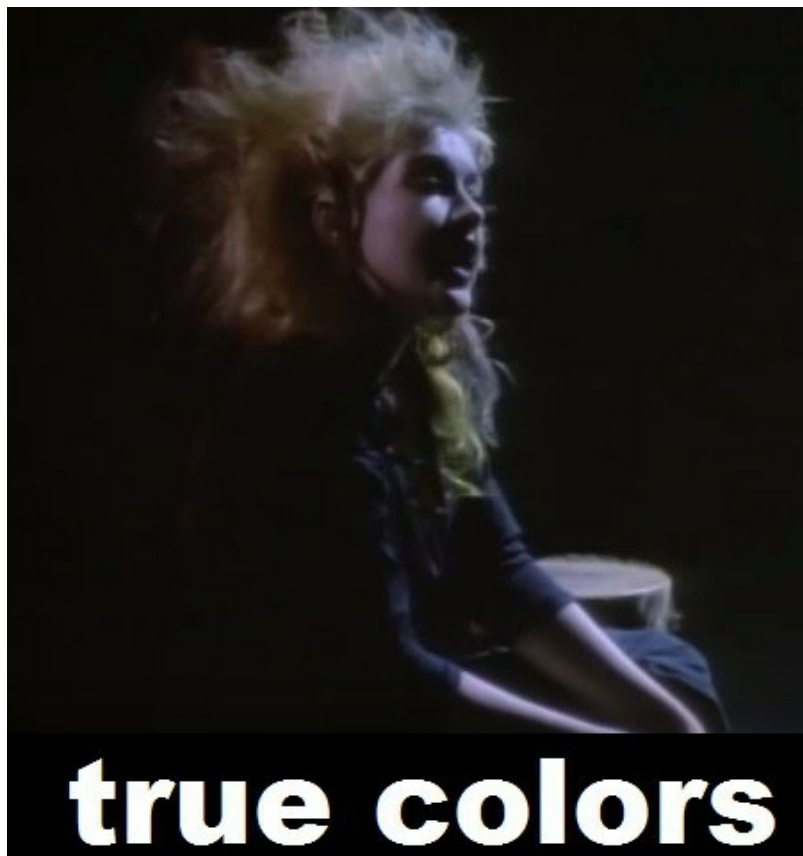
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Thirty-Seven to Thirty-Eight

- [Uncategorized](#)
- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Thirty-Seven to Thirty-Eight



#### Chapter Thirty-Seven

Everyone ignored Da Tian Ting.

‘Duan Hua, take Ming Sheng to the hospital,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Auntie Lam, it’s not a serious injury,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘My arm will heal. I don’t need to go to the hospital. Auntie Lam, uncle Shang, don’t blame big sister.’

Shang Ming and Lam Shu Pan thought Da Ming Sheng was a forgiving person,

and their impression of her changed.

‘Da Tian Ting, I told you I hate you,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘It’s the reason why I don’t want to marry you. If you want to take revenge then take revenge on me. Leave Ming Sheng out of this.’

‘When did I take revenge on Ming Sheng?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘The assistants witnessed you scolding Ming Sheng in the kitchen,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘Can you deny it?’

‘Is it wrong of me to express how I feel?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting thought most people in her shoes would do the same. There was nothing wrong with expressing how she felt about being betrayed and lied to for ten years.

‘There is nothing wrong with expressing how you feel,’ Shang Duan Hua. ‘But you shouldn’t pour hot water on Ming Sheng’s arm. It makes me hate you more.’

Shang Duan Hua’s bit of guilt toward Da Tian Ting disappeared. He thought Da Tian Ting was only a country bumpkin. He didn’t expect her to be a vindictive woman.

‘When did I pour hot water on Ming Sheng’s arm?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Tian Ting, stop lying,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Everyone in the kitchen witnessed you pouring hot water on Ming Sheng’s arm. We can understand why you took revenge on Ming Sheng. But we hope that you won’t do something like this again.’

Da Tian Ting turned around to look at an assistant.

‘Aunty, is it true everyone saw me pour hot water on Ming Sheng’s arm?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Can aunty honestly say you saw me pour hot water on Ming Sheng’s arm?’

‘Miss Tian Ting, we all heard you scold Miss Ming Sheng in the kitchen and saw the pot of hot water in your hands,’ the assistant said.

Da Tian Ting cried in her heart, and appeared calm on the outside.

‘Uncle Lam, do you believe I would do something like this?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Tian Ting, it’s not that uncle doesn’t want to believe you,’ Shang Ming said. ‘But how can uncle believe you if everyone witnessed you pour hot water on Ming Sheng’s arm.’

‘In everyone’s eyes, am I someone vindictive?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting understood why Da Ming Sheng burned her own arm. Da Ming Sheng wanted everyone to turn against Da Tian Ting. What made Da Tian Ting sad and disappointed was that everyone was easily fooled by Da Ming Sheng.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Thirty-Eight**

Da Ming Sheng was gloating everyone believed her over Da Tian Ting, and she continued to act like the victim.

‘Uncle Shang, aunty Lam, I understand big sister’s pain,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘If my arm being burned can ease big sister’s pain then it’s worth it.’

‘Duan Hua is lucky to marry someone as understanding and forgiving like Ming Sheng,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

Da Tian Ting’s understood Lam Shu Pan’s undertone. She was hurt everyone believed she was a vindictive person. In their eyes she had become an unwelcome outsider.

‘Can you tone it down?’ Shang Ming asked Lam Shu Pan.

Shang Ming knew what Da Tian Ting did was wrong, but he was sad to see Da Tian Ting’s tears.

‘I’m only stating the truth,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘You know I’m someone who is straight forward. Today we know who has a good heart and who has a bad heart. I hate two faced people the most.’

Lam Shu Pan’s words made Da Ming Sheng anxious. Da Ming Sheng was scared what Lam Shu Pan would do if one day Lam Shu Pan found out the truth.

Da Tian Ting was hurt by how easily everyone turned their backs on her overnight. She thought it was sad she treated everyone like her family for ten years yet Da Ming Sheng’s little scheme could make everyone forget everything she did for them.

Lam Shu Pan didn't want to see Da Tian Ting cry either.

'Tian Ting, don't blame me for stating the truth,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Everyone witnessed you pour hot water on Ming Sheng. Ming Sheng forgave you. If you continue to be like this, everyone will only hate you more.'

'Aunty Lam, don't be harsh on big sister,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'I can understand why big sister took revenge on me.'

Da Ming Sheng's innocent act made Da Tian Ting sick. Da Tian Ting thought the situation was a bad joke on her. Shang Duan Hua, Shang Ming and Lam Shu Pan's misunderstanding showed their true colors.

'Since everyone hates me, there is no reason for me to stay here,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I can honestly say I didn't pour hot water on Ming Sheng. Whether everyone believes Ming Sheng or me, it doesn't matter. I won't step foot in this home again. But I will keep my promise and attend Duan Hua and Ming Sheng's wedding and wish them happiness.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Thirty-Seven to Thirty-Eight

**Share this:**

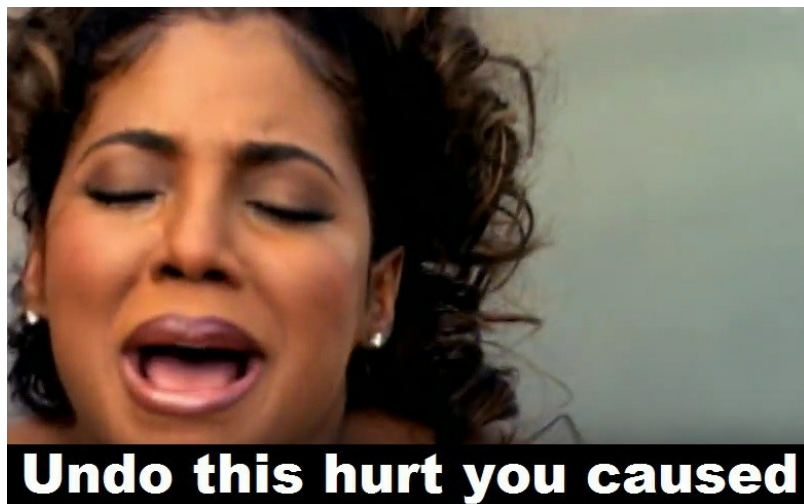
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 17, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Thirty-Nine to Forty

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Thirty-Nine to Forty



### Chapter Thirty-Nine

Everyone were shaken by the conviction in Da Tian Ting's tone of voice. They watched her walk out the door, and suspected something wasn't right.

Da Ming Sheng knew she had to control the situation.

'Uncle Shang, aunty Lam, big sister is gone,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'I've forgiven big sister, and I hope everyone can forgive big sister too.'

Da Ming Sheng didn't want to burn her arm for nothing. She would say anything to make everyone stay on her side.

'Ming Sheng, you don't need to be so understanding,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'No one would hold a pot of hot water for fun. We believe you.'

Lam Shu Pan's bit of suspicion disappeared. She believed Da Tian Ting did pour hot water on Ming Sheng's arm.

'Aunty Lam, uncle Shang, I don't blame big sister,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'Big



sister loved Duan Hua for ten years, and overnight her world changed. I can understand why big sister took revenge on me. I only hope big sister will forgive me.'

Da Ming Sheng was happy Shang Ming and Lam Shu Pan chose to believe her. It would make her married life with Shang Duan Hua smoother. Da Tian Ting couldn't blame her for protecting her own happiness. Da Ming Sheng felt no remorse for destroying Shang Ming and Lam Shu Pan's bond with Da Tian Ting. Da Ming Sheng would be a fool if she didn't hold onto her happiness.

Shang Duan Hua could finally let go of Da Tian Ting. No one forced Da Tian Ting to take care of him for ten years. He didn't need to feel guilty toward Da Tian Ting.

'Dad, are you ready to accept me marrying Ming Sheng?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

'What is there to oppose?' Lam Shu Pan interrupted. 'Ming Sheng is a good woman. Duan Hua is lucky to marry Ming Sheng.'

Da Ming Sheng waited for Shang Ming to give his blessing. Shang Ming was the head of the Shang Household. If Shang Ming gave his blessing, it cemented her position in the Shang Household.

'These days the world belongs to the young generation,' Shang Ming said. 'Duan Hua and Ming Sheng can make their own choices.'

'Dad, thank you for your blessing,' Shang Duan Hua said.

Da Ming Sheng secretly rejoiced. In the future she only needed to be a good wife to Shang Duan Hua, and live a good life. She didn't care if she was selfish, and didn't care what would happen to Da Tian Ting.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Forty**

Da Tian Ting took her shredded heart onto the dark streets. She was a lost small boat in a vast ocean. She didn't know where her home was.

Da Tian Ting couldn't go to her uncle's home or the Shang family home. She didn't want to return to her lonely apartment.

Da Tian Ting stood at the bus bay. She didn't know what bus to catch. She wanted her mum to hold her and have a good cry. But she knew it was impossible.

Da Tian Ting sat on a bench, and cried alone. Her heart felt colder than the cold windy night. She thought there were people who cared about her even if she didn't have her parents in her life. She was wrong, she was alone in the world.

Da Tian Ting's phone rang. It was a number she didn't recognise. She thought it was a prank caller to mock her when she hit rock bottom.

'Right now I want to die,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Don't bother me. Go and find another person to prank tonight.'

Da Tian Ting hung up the phone.

Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting's careless words seriously.

Feng Kai Ze had to explain until he was blue in the face for him to be released from the psychiatric ward. Then he drove to Da Tian Ting's apartment, and waited all day for her to come home.

Feng Kai Ze was worried something happened to Da Tian Ting. He called her several times before she picked up her phone. Hearing her say she wanted to kill herself made him forget about being angry at her for lying to the doctor.

Feng Kai Ze didn't care if Da Tian Ting was being serious or not, he had to find her before she didn't anything to harm herself.

Feng Kai Ze called Yang Fei's phone.

'Yang Fei, I don't care what method you use,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Within two hours, I want you to find out where Da Tian Ting is.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Thirty-Nine to Forty

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)

- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## ***Related***

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## 41 – 42

### UVB – Chapters Forty-One to Forty-Two

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



#### Chapters Forty-One to Forty-Two



#### Chapter Forty-One

Yang Fei was in the middle of dinner when he received Feng Kai Ze's phone call. He didn't know why Feng Kai Ze wanted to find Da Tian Ting, but he spread the word on the underground streets and contacted all TV broadcasting stations in the city.

In a short period, Da Tian Ting became a famous missing person in the city.

Da Qing Feng was watching a drama on TV. The drama was interrupted by an emergency broadcast. The blurred photo of the missing person looked like his niece, Da Tian Ting.

'Qing Feng, is our Da Tian Ting the missing person on TV?' Ning Kan asked.

Ning Kan didn't believe anyone would waste money to broadcast Da Tian Ting was missing, and offer a reward of one hundred thousand dollars.

'I don't know,' Da Qing Feng said. 'I'll call Tian Ting's phone.'

Da Qing Feng called Da Tian Ting's phone, but her phone was switched off.

'Her phone is switched off,' Da Qing Feng said.

'You don't need to worry,' Ning Kan said. 'Tian Ting is nobody important. No

one would waste money to find her. It must be another person with the same name and age as her.'

Ning Kan switched the channels, but Da Tian Ting's name was on every channel. She hated being reminded of Da Tian Ting so she switched off the TV.

'Where are you going?' Ning Kan asked.

'I can't just sit here if Tian Ting's missing,' Da Qing Feng said. 'I'm going out to look for Tian Ting.'

Ning Kan hated Da Tian Ting for taking up Da Qing Feng's mind. For ten years she and Da Ming Sheng had endured being second best to Da Tian Ting in Da Qing Feng's eyes. She was happy Da Ming Sheng stole Shang Duan Hua from Da Qing Feng.

At the Shang family home, everyone saw Da Tian Ting's blurred photo on TV too.

'Does someone want to find Tian Ting?' Shang Ming asked.

'Tian Ting just left,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'No one would want to find her. It's probably someone with the same name as her.'

Da Ming Sheng replaced Da Tian Ting's place in Lam Shu Pan's heart.

'Ming Sheng, in the future you need to come visit aunty often,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Yes aunty,' Da Ming Sheng said sweetly.

Shang Ming didn't approve how nonchalant Lam Shu Pan and Da Ming Sheng were while Da Tian Ting was missing. He called Da Tian Ting's phone, it was switched off.

'Duan Hua, go look for Tian Ting,' Shang Ming said.

'Dad...' Shang Duan Hua said.

'Go and find Tian Ting!' Shang Ming said.

'Fine,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'I'll go look for her.'

'Uncle Shang, aunty Lam, I'll go with Duan Hua to look for big sister too,' Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng didn't want to give Da Tian Ting an opportunity to expose the truth.

\*\*\*

## Chapter Forty-Two

Da Tian Ting walked the streets aimlessly. She didn't know people were looking for her.

Da Tian Ting couldn't shake off Shang Duan Hua's betrayal, Da Ming Sheng's deceit and Shang Duan Hua's parents' gullibility.

Da Tian Ting walked into a corner liquor shop. She randomly picked up bottles of wine, and went to the counter.

At the counter Da Tian Ting took money out of her wallet and her ID dropped out.

'Miss, you dropped your ID,' the cashier said.

'Thank you,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Wait,' the cashier said. 'Miss, are you Da Tian Ting?'

'Yes,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Why?'

'No reason,' the cashier said.

The cashier gave back the ID to Da Tian Ting, and smiled at her like the cashier was about to receive one hundred thousand dollars.

Da Tian Ting carried the bottle of wines outside, and the cashier reported Da Tian Ting's location to receive the one hundred thousand dollar reward.

Da Tian Ting walked to a bridge above a lake. She sat on the edge of the bridge, drank wine and looked at the city scenery to cheer herself up.

'Da Tian Ting, why is your life such a failure?' Da Tian Ting asked herself.

Da Tian Ting stood up on the bridge, and threw an empty bottle into the lake.

'Shang Duan Hua, Da Ming Sheng, you MFs!' Da Tian Ting said. 'I hate both of you!'

The wind blew, Da Tian Ting lost her balance and fell into the lake.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Forty-One to Forty-Two

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapters Forty-Three to Forty-Four

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapters Forty-Three to Forty-Four



Chapter Forty-Three

Feng Kai Ze stopped the car on the bridge, and rushed out of his car.

‘Tian Ting!’ Feng Kai Ze called.

‘Save me!’ Da Tian Ting screamed.

Feng Kai Ze jumped into the lake, and swam to Da Tian Ting.

Da Tian Ting didn’t know how to swim. The cold water helped to sober her. She wasn’t ready to see her father yet.

Every time Da Tian Ting screamed for help, she swallowed water. The moment the lake submerged her body, she realised how precious life was.

Under the lake surface, Da Tian Ting ran out of air. She closed her eyes. She told herself that if she survived that night, she wouldn’t waste her life pining over a man who didn’t love her or be sad because of people who didn’t understand her.

Da Tian Ting felt someone’s arms held her waist, and their mouth breathed air into her mouth.

Feng Kai Ze held onto Da Tian Ting’s waist, and pulled her body to land.



Da Tian Ting opened her eyes. She saw a blurry face of a man. She didn't know who the man was, but she knew it wasn't Shang Duan Hua.

On land Feng Kai Ze's hands pressed below Da Tian Ting's chest until she threw up water.

A crowd surrounded Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze. A person from the crowd called an ambulance.

The paramedics quickly arrived at the scene. They wanted to carry Da Tian Ting into the ambulance, but Feng Kai Ze refused to let go of Da Tian Ting.

'What do you want?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'We need to take the patient to the hospital,' a paramedic said.

Feng Kai Ze snapped out of his panic. He carried Da Tian Ting into the ambulance and the paramedics took them to the hospital.

Feng Kai Ze finally found Da Tian Ting after sixteen years. He wasn't going to let her leave their world.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Forty-Four**

Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng arrived at the bridge. An ambulance passed by them, but they didn't know who was inside the ambulance.

Shang Duan Hua found a bag on the bridge.

'Ming Sheng, isn't this Tian Ting's bag?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

'Yes,' Da Min Sheng said. 'It's big sister's bag. But where is big sister?'

Shang Duan Hua looked around the bridge. There were only unopened bottles of wine. He couldn't see Da Tian Ting anywhere, and worried something happened to her. He knew she wasn't someone who was careless, and she wouldn't throw her bag on a bridge.

Shang Duan Hua stopped a man passing by.

'Sir, did you see anything happen here?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

'Yes,' the man said. 'A woman jumped off this bridge. Someone saved the

woman, and the paramedics took her to the hospital.'

'Do you know what the woman looked like?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

Shang Duan Hua wanted to know if Da Tian Ting was the person inside the ambulance he saw before.

'I didn't see her body clearly,' the man said. 'But her face looked young like in her late twenties.'

The man didn't want to answer Shang Duan Hua's questions anymore, and walked to his car.

Shang Duan Hua regretted causing Da Tian Ting pain. Why did he lie to her for ten years? He was the reason why she jumped off the bridge.

'Ming Sheng, I want to go to the hospital and see if Tian Ting is OK,' Shang Duan Hua said.

Da Ming Sheng held onto Shang Duan Hua arm.

'Duan Hua!' Da Ming Sheng called. 'If you go to the hospital now, you'll give big sister hope. Do you want to marry big sister?'

'I...' Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Duan Hua didn't want to marry a country bumpkin like Da Tian Ting. He didn't know what he should do.

'Duan Hua, don't let big sister blackmail you into marrying her,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'If you go to the hospital to see big sister, you'll fall into her trap.'

Shang Duan Hua heard blackmail, and made up his mind not to go the hospital.

'Big sister is at the hospital now,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'Big sister will be OK. We can visit big sister tomorrow, and return her bag.'

Da Ming Sheng didn't expect Da Tian Ting would jump off the bridge to hold onto Shang Duan Hua. Da Ming Sheng thought of another scheme to destroy Da Tian Ting's hope.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Forty-Three to Forty-Four

# Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Forty-Five to Forty-Six

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Forty-Five to Forty-Six



### Chapter Forty-Five

Feng Kai Ze sat next to Da Tian Ting’s hospital bed. The doctor told him Da Tian Ting was healthy, and she would wake up later.

Feng Kai Ze was relieved Da Tian Ting was OK. Then he was angry Da Tian Ting jumped off a bridge because of Shang Duan Hua.

Feng Kai Ze found out Shang Duan Hua had an affair with Da Ming Sheng behind Da Tian Ting’s back for years. He didn’t think Da Tian Ting wanting to kill herself over a man who betrayed her was worth it.

Feng Kai Ze knew killing Shang Duan Hua would only keep Shang Duan Hua in Da Tian Ting’s heart forever. He was going to slowly step into Da Tian Ting heart and rid of all traces of Shang Duan Hua.

On the other hand, Feng Kai Ze should thank Shang Duan Hua for breaking up with Da Tian Ting on the day he reunited with Da Tian Ting.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's hand. Fate separated them for sixteen years, but let them meet again. He loved her for giving him a memorable childhood, and for cheering him up every time he thought of her.

'Fierce apple, now that we met each other again after sixteen years, I'm not going to let you go,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You'll always be my fierce apple.'

Feng Kai Ze kissed Da Tian Ting's hand.

'I want to hold your hand forever,' Feng Kai Ze said.

In the morning, Da Tian Ting woke up. Her nose and throat felt sore. She remembered someone saved her from drowning. She wondered who saved her and took her to the hospital.

Da Tian Ting touched her lips. She felt the man's mouth who breathed air into her mouth was someone she knew.

Da Tian Ting got out of bed to find the man who saved her to thank him.

Da Tian Ting looked at the door, and saw a couple barged into her hospital room.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Forty-Six**

Da Tian Ting didn't expect to see Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng to barge into her hospital room.

Da Tian Ting didn't want Shang Duan Hua to be the man who saved her last night. She didn't want a man who betrayed her to touch her lips.

'Why are you two here?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Big sister, this is your bag,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'We came here to return your bag.'

Da Ming Sheng gave the bag to Da Tian Ting, and she linked arms with Shang Duan Hua.

Da Tian Ting's eyes were wide opened. She saw Da Ming Sheng's true colors

behind Da Ming Sheng's innocent facade.

Da Tian Ting looked at her bag, and felt disgust. She didn't want Shang Duan Hua to be the man who saved her. She got a headache thinking about her life being saved by the man who betrayed her.

Da Tian Ting laid back on the bed, and used the bedsheet to cover her body. She didn't want to see the lowlife people standing in her hospital room.

'Tian Ting, you're old enough to know you shouldn't blackmail another person,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'I don't care if you used your life to blackmail me. I won't fall for your trap. Stop hoping I'll marry you.'

'When did I use my life to blackmail you into marrying me?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting thought about what Shang Duan Hua said, and knew that people would have mistaken her accidental fall as her jumping off a bridge.

'Think about your own pathetic actions,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'If you continue to be this way, I never want to see you again. Ming Sheng, let's go.'

Da Tian Ting threw a pillow at Shang Duan Hua's Mr. Know It All head.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Forty-Five to Forty-Six

## Share this:

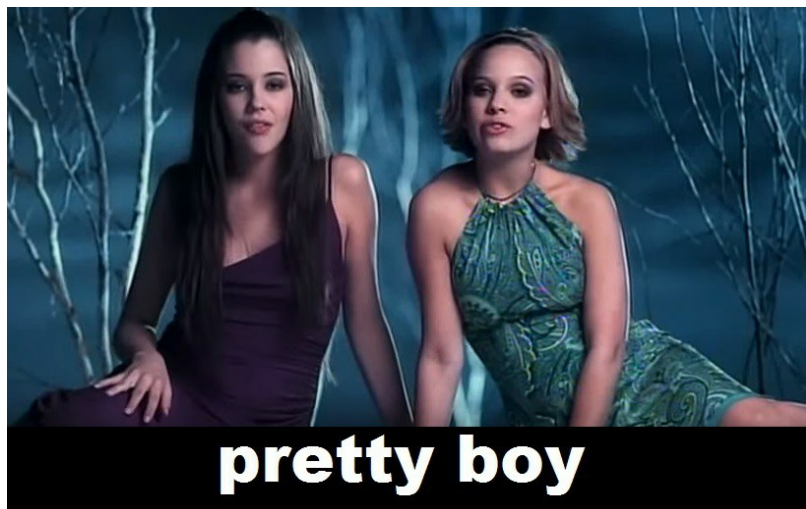
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Forty-Seven to Forty-Eight

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Forty-Seven to Forty-Eight



#### Chapter Forty-Seven

‘Da Tian Ting!’ Shang Duan Hua called. ‘You’re twenty-eight. You’re not child anymore. Acting childish will only make people hate you more.’

‘If you hate me then why did you save me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Saved you?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

Shang Duan Hua wanted to lie and say he saved Da Tian Ting, but a nurse told them off for disturbing other patients.

‘This is a hospital not the markets,’ the nurse said. ‘Don’t disturb patients resting. Miss, your doctor discharged you. You’re free to go. Take good care of your body.’

‘Thank you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Miss, I’m envious of you,’ the nurse said. ‘You have a handsome and caring boyfriend. He took care of you the whole night. He went out to get you

breakfast.'

'My boyfriend?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn't know she had a boyfriend. Did that mean Shang Duan Hua wasn't the man who saved her?

'Nurse, is this the man who took me to the hospital last night?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'No,' the nurse said. 'Don't tell me the handsome man who took you to the hospital last night isn't your boyfriend.'

'He's not my boyfriend,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting thought the man who saved her must be a good man. He didn't know her, but he took care of her last night. She was happy Shang Duan Hua wasn't the man who saved her.

'Miss, you can leave anytime,' the nurse said and walked outside.

Shang Duan Hua was frustrated Da Tian Ting acted like he didn't exist. He held Da Ming Sheng's hand, and took her outside. Why didn't he want the nurse to tell Da Tian Ting the truth that he wasn't the man who saved her?

Da Ming Sheng didn't want Shang Duan Hua to think about Da Tian Ting. She was going to everything to be Mrs Shang.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Forty-Eight**

Feng Kai Ze carried a breakfast box to Da Tian Ting's hospital room. On the way he saw Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng for the first time in person. Why did they come to see Da Tian Ting?

Feng Kai Ze walked faster to see his fierce apple.

Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng didn't notice Feng Kai Ze, and they passed by him.

In Da Tian Ting's hospital room, Da Tian Ting rejoiced Shang Duan Hua didn't save her because she didn't want to owe him anything. She truly wanted him to become a stranger to her.



‘Da Tian Ting, from now on, you need to live a full life!’ Da Tian Ting cheered herself up. ‘Ah... hello world!’

Feng Kai Ze heard Da Tian Ting’s scream, and slammed the door opened.

‘Why are you here?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn’t know why Mr Crazy followed her everywhere.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t care if Da Tian Ting looked at him like he was crazy. He sat next to her bed, and checked her body for injuries. He was relieved Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng didn’t injure her.

‘Mr Feng, how long do you plan on following me around?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn’t know how she was supposed to start a new life if the man who broke her heart, and Mr Crazy kept appearing in front of her.

‘Forever,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting was suspicious why Mr Crazy was looking at her lovingly. What did he want? Crazy or not, she couldn’t deny he was eye candy.

‘Why do you have to be such a pretty boy?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting thought the nurse was right. People would envy her if she had a handsome boyfriend like Mr Crazy.

‘Have you stared enough?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t mind Da Tian Ting staring at him all day. But he wasn’t a pansy pretty boy, he was a man.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Forty-Seven to Forty-Eight

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
-

## ***Related***

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## 49 – 50

### UVB – Chapters Forty-Nine to Fifty

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



#### Chapters Forty-Nine to Fifty



#### Chapter Forty-Nine

‘Who would want to stare at Mr Crazy?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting thought Mr Crazy would be a perfect man if his brain worked, and if he was gentler and caring. She should stop wishing he was a perfect man, because he wasn’t her boyfriend.

‘Remember I’m not Mr Crazy,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze gritted his teeth thinking about that day Da Tian Ting lied to the doctor that he was crazy. If it was someone else who lied about him being crazy, he would have buried them that day.

Feng Kai Ze would turn a blind eye to everything Da Tian Ting did except if she let another man inside her heart.

‘There isn’t a crazy person in this world who would admit they’re crazy,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tell me if I’m crazy then why did the psychiatrists release me?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Mmm... you made a good point,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Miss Scatterbrain, you must be hungry,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I brought you breakfast. I’ll take you home after breakfast.’

Da Tian Ting accepted the breakfast box, and her eyes teared up. Since her dad died, she told herself she needed to be independent and take care of herself. No one had bought a meal for her after her dad died.

Over three thousand days, Da Tian Ting cooked for herself. She usually worked overtime and came home late. The rare days she came home early, she cooked dinner for Shang Duan Hua and sacrificed her stomach. No one knew she suffered from periodic stomach ulcers.

‘You missed out on dinner,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Don’t you feel hungry?’

Feng Kai Ze was sad to see Da Tian Ting suddenly cried.

‘Why are you crying?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Don’t you like the breakfast I brought you?’

Da Tian Ting suddenly saw there was someone apart from her dad who cared about her stomach. She hugged Mr Crazy, and cried on his warm shoulder.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Fifty**

Feng Kai Ze didn’t know why Da Tian Ting was crying. He patted her back, and wanted her to feel that she had him to rely on. He hoped after a good cry, she could forget all her sorrows.

Da Tian Ting stopped crying, and moved out of Mr Crazy’s arms.

‘Hey,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Are you taking advantage of me?’

If Mr Crazy wasn’t coo-coo. It meant he had an ulterior motive for following her around.

‘Does your brain understand the concept of thinking logically?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘You suddenly hugged me, and took advantage of me.’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t know why he had the misfortune of falling in love with Miss Scatterbrain.

‘Mr Feng, why are you suddenly nice to me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Because in this lifetime you’re my one and only woman,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘And I saved your life. From now on, without my permission you’re not allowed to gamble with your life again.’

‘Huh?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting couldn’t equate Mr Crazy and her savior together.

‘Don’t tell me that you’re the man who saved me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Oh mother, Da Tian Ting couldn’t believe Mr Crazy was her savior, the first man who kissed her lips and breathed air into her mouth.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m you’re savior.’

Da Tian Ting hit her forehead.

‘I attracted trouble into my life,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Do you think it’s worth jumping over a bridge because of a man who betrayed you?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Who said I jumped over a bridge because of a man who betrayed me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting wanted to know if intelligent men were an extinct breed. Why did Shang Duan Hua and Mr Crazy accuse her of taking her own life?

‘Then why did you jump into the lake?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Don’t you understand how valuable your life is?’

‘Mr Pig Head, I didn’t jump into the lake!’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘The strong wind knocked me over the bridge, and I fell into the lake!’

Da Tian Ting didn’t want anyone to misunderstand she wanted to kill herself because of a lowlife like Shang Duan Hua.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Forty-Nine to Fifty

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

# 51 – 52

## UVB – Chapters Fifty-One to Fifty-Two

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Fifty-One to Fifty-Two



#### Fifty-One

Feng Kai Ze was happy to hear Da Tian Ting didn't jump over a bridge because of Shang Duan Hua. It meant Shang Duan Hua was no longer an important person to her.

'You really didn't jump into the lake?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Why would I jump into the lake when I have a healthy body?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Then what were you doing on a bridge alone at night?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

The patients, nurses and doctors thought Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting were having a lover's quarrel.

'I...' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting didn't know where to start explaining why her heart broke that night. It started with Shang Duan Hua. If he didn't lie to her for ten years, she wouldn't be heart broken, wander around in the streets at night, drinking wine on a bridge and accidently fall into a lake.

‘You don’t need to explain,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I understand.’

‘What do you understand?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Your fiancé left you for another woman,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘It’s normal for you to have a broken heart.’

‘Who are you?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Why do you know so much about me?’

‘I know everything about you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Like your height, and you’re a D cup.’

Da Tian Ting’s arms covered her chest.

‘Slimy man, what do you want?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze leaned his face close to Da Tian Ting, and pretended he was undressing her with his eyes.

‘If I’m a slimy man, I would have done something to you that night you were drunk,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Then what do you want?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn’t know why Feng Kai Ze’s proximity made her body hot. Did she have a fever?

‘To pursue you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze sat upright on the chair.

Da Tian Ting thought she heard a man say he wanted to pursue her. Since she was eighteen, her world revolved around Shang Duan Hua. It was the first time a man said he wanted to pursue her. Feng Kai Ze caused a small ripple in her heart.

Da Tian Ting pointed a finger at her face.

‘You want to pursue me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I want to pursue you.’

\*\*\*

## Chapter Fifty-Two

Du Tian Ting remembered the first day she met Feng Kai Ze. He told her she wasn’t allowed to touch him. The second time they met, he told her that they



were strangers, looked at her like he hated her and left her stranded. In her memories, he only insulted her and hurt her feelings. She didn't believe he wanted to pursue her.

'Mr Feng, I'm going to be straight forward with you,' Da Tian Ting said. 'If you want to play with someone's heart then go and find another sucker. Bye.'

Da Tian Ting got out of bed, she picked up her bag, took two steps and her stomach hurt. She hunched over, held her stomach and endured the pain.

'Sit and eat breakfast,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Why do I need to eat if you tell me to eat?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn't want to accept Feng Kai Ze's breakfast.

'Why are you making your stomach suffer?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'It's my stomach and I can make it suffer if I want to,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I told you, your business is my business,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You need to eat.'

'Why do I need to eat?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Because you suffer from a periodic stomach ulcer,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'After you eat breakfast, I'll take you home.'

'How do you know about my stomach ulcer?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Because the doctor that gave you a check-up informed me about your medical history,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'If you don't eat, I'll...'

'You'll what?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting got the impression Feng Kai Ze wasn't totally heartless. At least he wouldn't do anything to directly harm her, and there were a couple of occasions he was nice to her.

Da Tian Ting didn't want to eat Feng Kai Ze's breakfast, because she understood there was no such thing as a free lunch in the world. If Shang Duan Hua lied to her for ten years, it meant a stranger like Feng Kai Ze was likely to have an ulterior motive to be nice to her.

Feng Kai Ze leaned his face close to Da Tian Ting's face again.

‘I’ll kiss you,’ Feng Kai Ze bluffed.

Da Tian Ting accepted Feng Kai Ze’s breakfast. She sat on the bed, and began eating.

Da Tian Ting reasoned she ate because she was hungry. It wasn’t because she was scared Feng Kai Ze would kiss her again.

Feng Kai Ze was happy he finally got to see Da Tian Ting eat the breakfast he brought her. In the past she secretly put food and drinks in his bag. It was his turn to take care of her stomach.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Fifty-One to Fifty-Two

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Fifty-Three to Fifty-Four

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Fifty-Three to Fifty-Four



#### Chapter Fifty-Three

Feng Kai Ze filled out Da Tian Ting's discharge form after breakfast. Then he returned to her hospital room. She was nowhere to be seen. He noticed a note on a table.

Mr Feng,

Bye. Let's not meet again. I'm off to work. Take care of yourself. When you're free, get your head examined.

Feng Kai Ze couldn't believe Da Tian Ting went to work the day after she had a near death experience.

'Da Tian Ting, let's see if you can go to work again,' Feng Kai Ze said to the note.

Feng Kai Ze crumbled the note, tossed it in the bin and walked to the parking lot.

Feng Kai Ze drove straight to Tian Chen's company. If Da Tian Ting didn't know how to value her life then he was going to help her value her life.

The employees at Tian Chen's company were nervous to see a man who looked

like he was on fire waltzed into their workplace.

Feng Kai Ze didn't want to search every office on Da Tian Ting's floor. He spotted her friend from the cafe, and walked to her friend's desk.

'Where's Da Tian Ting?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Sir, why are you looking for Tian Ting?' Ding Xiao Ran asked.

Ding Xiao Ran thought the man on fire had a hot body. Too bad there was fire in his eyes.

'Where is Da Tian Ting?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'I've met all of Tian Ting's friends,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'Sir, you're not Tian Ting's friend. Why are you looking for her?'

'Get to the point,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Where is Da Tian Ting?'

'She didn't come to work today,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'She's not here.'

'You're lying,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'If you don't believe me, check for yourself,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'Her desk is over there. Her manager, Miss Ma's office is that way. You can ask Miss Ma if she came into work today.'

Feng Kai Ze walked to Da Tian Ting's tidy desk, and realised she played him. Where did she go if she wasn't at work?

'Tian Ting, since you played me, wait and see how I like to play,' Feng Kai Ze said to Da Tian Ting's switched off laptop.

Feng Kai Ze strode out of Da Tian Ting's workplace, and headed to her apartment.

Ding Xiao Ran called Da Tian Ting's phone to warn her about the man on fire looking for her at work.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Fifty-Four**

Da Tian Ting lied to Feng Kai Ze to buy her time to go home and pack her suitcase. She wanted to find a new apartment where he couldn't find her.

Da Tian Ting carried her suitcase out of her old apartment, and received a warning phone call from Ding Xiao Ran.

‘Xiao Ran, thank you for warning me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’m on my way out to look for a new apartment. I’ll call you when I found one. Bye.’

Da Tian Ting hung up the phone, walked outside the building and got into a taxi. Her life was in enough turmoil. She didn’t want a stalker to complicate her life more. After she settled in a new apartment, she was going to live a peaceful life.

When Feng Kai Ze arrived at Da Tian Ting’s old apartment, he found out she moved out. He immediately called Yang Fei’s phone.

‘Yang Fei, I need your help again...’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Yang Fei was at the Feng Mansion. The last time he helped Feng Kai Ze find Da Tian Ting under two hours, it gave him a headache. He didn’t know what got into Feng Kai Ze’s system. Feng Kai Ze had always kept his distance from women, but lately Feng Kai Ze was obsessed with Da Tian Ting.

‘I understand,’ Yang Fei said. ‘I’ll help you. Bye.’

Feng Jia Yong overheard Yang Fei talking on the phone with his son.

‘Yang Fei, were you talking to my son?’ Feng Jia Yong asked. ‘What did he ask you to do?’

‘Boss, your son asked me to send an email to all CEOs in the city,’ Yang Fei said. ‘Warning them not to hire a woman named Da Tian Ting.’

Feng Jia Yong put the newspaper on the table.

‘My son has always kept his distance from women,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Why has he taken an interest in the woman named Da Tian Ting?’

‘Perhaps the woman is a gold digger,’ Dai Fang Dung interrupted. ‘She probably found out Kai Ze’s identity, and wants to dig her claws into him. So Kai Ze wants to teach her a lesson. Some women would do anything to marry into money.’

‘Yang Fei, help my son deal with the woman named Da Tian Ting,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Don’t let gold diggers come near my son. I get to decide who my son

marries.'

'Yes boss,' Yang Fei said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Fifty-Three to Fifty-Four

**Share this:**

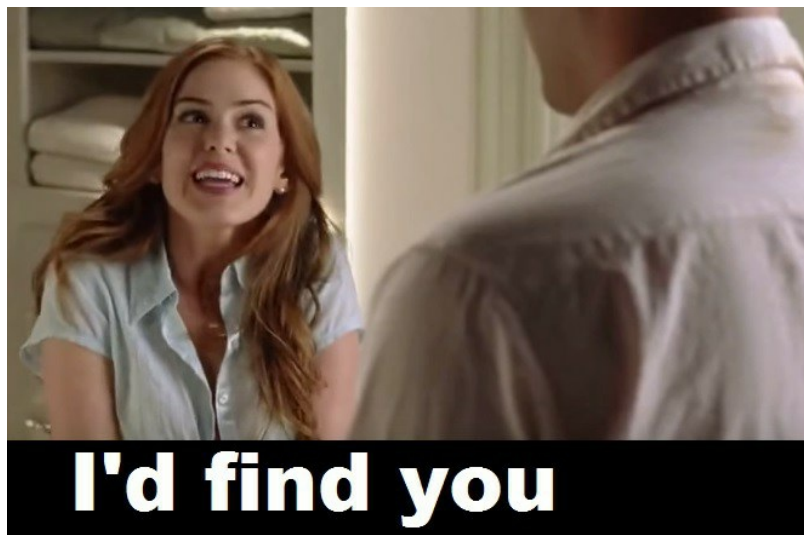
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Fifty-Five to Fifty-Six

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Fifty-Five to Fifty-Six



#### Chapter Fifty-Five

Feng Kai Ze called Da Tian Ting's phone, it was switched off.

'Da Tian Ting, you're dead meat!' Feng Kai Ze vowed. 'There is nowhere you can hide. I'll find you.'

Outside the CBD, Da Tian Ting settled into a peaceful apartment. She was going to forget Shang Duan Hua, and escape the stalker Feng Kai Ze.

'Da Tian Ting, today is the start of your new life,' Da Tian Ting encouraged herself. 'Don't live your life for another person. You need to live for you.'

Da Tian Ting opened a window, she breathed in fresh air and unpacked her suitcase.

The following Monday, Da Tian Ting caught the bus to work. It took her two hours.

Da Tian Ting was exhausted after the long commute to work. She prepared herself to hear a lecture from her manager, because she didn't call in sick.

Da Tian Ting knocked on Miss Ma's office door.

'You're here,' Miss Ma said.

'Yes manager Ma,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting got a bad feeling because Miss Ma looked too calm.

'Since you're here, pack your belongings and hand in your resignation,' Miss Ma said.

'Resignation?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'Manager Ma, I didn't say I want to resign.'

'I know,' Manager Ma said. 'The CEO asked you to resign. The company will give you a three month severance pay. Go to payroll to update your account details. Then give a copy of your resignation to HR. Starting tomorrow you're no longer an employee at this company.'

'Manager Ma, I know my work performance lately has been poor,' Da Tian Ting said. 'But I promise I'll work harder. Please give me another chance.'

'Tian Ting, I know you're a hard worker,' Miss Ma said. 'If it's only about you taking days off work without approval, I can deduct your monthly pay and it'll be the end of it. But there is someone pulling strings behind the scene. The company can't keep you here.'

'Wh...' Da Tian Ting said.

'I'm sorry Tian Ting,' Miss Ma said. 'There is nothing you can do to change the outcome. I have work to do. Go outside and pack your belongings.'

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Fifty-Six**

Da Tian Ting walked outside of her former manager's office. Each step she took felt like she wore shoes that weighed a tonne. She lost her fiancé, why did she lose her job too?

Da Tian Ting wanted to cry while she packed her belongings on her desk. She had worked at the same company since she graduated.



‘Tian Ting, are you OK?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked.

Lam Ling had circulated the news around the office about Da Tian Ting being forced to resign.

‘I’m good,’ Da Tian Ting lied.

Da Tian Ting cried on the inside, and smiled on the outside. She didn’t want to cry in front of her former colleagues.

‘Tian Ting, everyone here is on your side,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘We all know you’re a hard worker. It’s unfair you’re being forced to resign without a legitimate reason.’

‘Xiao Ran, you should go back to work,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t want manager Ma to fire you because of me. Don’t worry about me. I’ll consider this as an overdue holiday.’

Ding Xiao Ran didn’t go back to her desk. She helped Da Tian Ting pack, and followed Da Tian Ting outside.

On the way out, Da Tian Ting overheard her former colleagues gossiped about her.

‘It’s unfair a hard worker like Tian Ting is dismissed,’ the first employee said.

‘Perhaps Tian Ting is the person who offended an executive from Feng’s company,’ the second employee said.

‘That’s a plausible conspiracy,’ the first employee said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Fifty-Five to Fifty-Six

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
-

## ***Related***

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB-Chapters Fifty-Seven to Fifty-Eight

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Fifty-Seven to Fifty-Eight



### Chapter Fifty-Seven

Da Tian Ting carried a box of her belongings and a heavy heart outside her former work building. What did she achieve in the last ten years? A relationship based on lies, and an unfair dismissal by a company where loyalty meant nothing.

Da Tian Ting looked back at her former work building one last time. She wiped her tears, and chanted to herself to stay strong. Then she turned around, and saw her stalker.

‘What are you doing here?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze’s black shades hid his eyes. He stood crossing his arms, and smiling at Da Tian Ting.

‘Even if you move overseas, it’s not hard for me to find you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Don’t you have another hobby besides stalking me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘You can say whatever you want,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘But there’s nowhere for you to hide. Did you think you can escape me if you move outside the CBD?’

‘How do you know where I moved to?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting couldn’t believe in less than a day, Feng Kai Ze found the address of her new apartment.

‘Because we’re neighbors,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll take you home. You don’t need to take the bus.’

‘I rather stand on a cramped bus than sit in your friend’s car,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting walked to the bus bay. If she couldn’t escape Feng Kai Ze then she could ignore him. He’d lose interest, and leave her alone.

Da Tian Ting lined up at her bus stop. Feng Kai Ze didn’t stop her, he lined up behind her.

‘I love a strong woman like you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze was grateful he stole Da Tian Ting’s diary. He would have hated her for the rest of his life if he didn’t read her diary.

‘Mr Feng, we’re strangers,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Don’t act like we’re close.’

Da Tian Ting’s bus arrived. She hopped on the bus, and paid for her ticket. She sat on a vacant window seat, and stuck her tongue out at Feng Kai Ze.

Feng Kai Ze watched Da Tian Ting’s bus depart.

‘Da Tian Ting, we’re not strangers,’ Feng Kai Ze said to the back of the bus. ‘We’ve known each other since primary school.’

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Fifty-Eight**

Da Tian Ting arrived home at two o’clock in the afternoon. She put the box down, and locked the front door because Mr Crazy lived next door. Then she

headed to her bedroom, because sleeping would help her avoid her depressing situation for several hours.

Da Tian Ting didn't make it all the way to her bedroom, because Mr Crazy was reading a newspaper in the living room like he was the home owner.

'When did you get here?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Half an hour ago,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze acted like he was reading the newspaper. But he paid close attention to Da Tian Ting's reactions. First she freaked when she discovered him in her living room. Then she looked back at the front door to check if she had locked it.

Feng Kai Ze had no interest in women except Da Tian Ting. He loved everything about her. He even loved the way she cursed him.

'How did you get into my home?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'I walked into your home,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'How did you unlock my front door?' Da Tian Ting asked.

If Mr Crazy didn't intrude into Da Tian Ting's home, she would be sleeping peacefully.

'I used a key to unlock the front door,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Did you think I used my fingers?'

Da Tian Ting thought she was hearing things, because Mr Crazy's tone of voice sounded affectionate.

'Where did you get a key to my home?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Haven't you heard that money can make ghosts dance?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

The landlord was happy to give Feng Kai Ze a spare key to Da Tian Ting's apartment after receiving a bribe from him.

'Mr Feng, what will it take for you to leave me?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting was drained. She didn't have energy to think about what the mysterious Mr Crazy wanted.

‘I’ll never leave you for the rest of your life,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Da Tian Ting, you need to accept in this lifetime you’ll be my wife.’

Da Tian Ting laughed and shook her head at Mr Crazy.

‘I, Da Tian Ting will never marry you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

There would never be a day Da Tian Ting would willingly marry Mr Crazy.

Feng Kai Ze stood, and stepped toward Da Tian Ting until their faces were only an inch apart.

‘One day soon, you’ll willingly marry me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Right now, you just got home. Go shower and get a good rest.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Fifty-Seven to Fifty-Eight

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Fifty-Nine to Sixty

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Fifty-Nine to Sixty



#### Chapter Fifty-Nine

Da Tian Ting didn't escape the stalker Feng Kai Ze, she became his neighbor. She didn't know if she should stay or leave.

'Ah... Mr Crazy!' Da Tian Ting yelled.

Feng Kai Ze heard Da Tian Ting's healthy lungs from his adjacent apartment to her apartment. He was relieved she wasn't sick from falling into the lake at night. He would think of ways to heal her broken heart while she was resting.

Mr Crazy closed his apartment door opposite her apartment, and she locked her front door.

'Why was she stalked by Mr Crazy?' Da Tian Ting asked the front door.

Da Tian Ting pulled her hair. If she couldn't escape then she needed a cold shower to cool off her anger.

After a cold shower, Da Tian Ting told herself to forget about why she attracted a coo-coo man. She felt a sharp stomach ache, and remembered she

skipped lunch. She didn't buy fresh ingredients to cook yet so she decided to make instant noodles.

Da Tian Ting went to the kitchen to boil water. The moment she poured boiled water into her cup of instant noodles, she heard the sound of the front door being unlocked. She turned around, the MF Feng Kai Ze casually intruded into her home. Lucky she was dressed conservatively. She would be mortified if Mr Crazy was the first man to see her naked.

'What are you doing in my home?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze walked to the dining room, and put down the two lunch boxes he bought to eat with Da Tian Ting.

'Why are you eating instant noodles if you know you have a weak stomach?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'What's wrong with eating instant noodles?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'I've eaten them my whole life, and I'm still alive.'

Da Tian Ting ignored Feng Kai Ze. She carried her cup of instant noodles to the dining table, sat on a chair and ate.

Feng Kai Ze grabbed the cup of instant noodles, walked to the bin and threw it in the bin.

'Hey,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Why did you throw away my lunch?'

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Sixty**

'Mr Feng, tell me what you want,' Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze put the lunch box he bought for Da Tian Ting in front of her.

'Eat this for lunch,' Feng Kai Ze said.

The gourmet lunch Feng Kai Ze put in front of Da Tian Ting turned on her taste buds. She told her taste buds not to be fooled by the good looking gourmet lunch, because poison could have been mixed into the food. She didn't understand why Feng Kai Ze wasted so much money on her. What was his agenda?



‘Mr Feng, I don’t believe a free lunch exists in the world,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You can either eat the food you brought here or you can take it home.’

‘This isn’t a free lunch,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘This is me pursuing you.’

‘Pursuing me?’ Da Tian Ting asked suspiciously.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I want to marry you.’

Da Tian Ting wanted to knock herself unconscious so she didn’t need to deal with Mr Crazy. If she married him, she would become Mrs Crazy.

‘Mr Crazy, I don’t have energy to play games with you,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Go find someone else to play with.’

Da Tian Ting had a poor impression of Feng Kai Ze. She didn’t believe he sincerely wanted to pursue her.

‘I’m not playing games,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m being sincere. Right now you don’t want to accept my sincerity, but I believe in the future you will. Eat lunch before you get a stomach ache.’

Da Tian Ting watched a lot of TV shows. She remembered ninety percent of the time, characters were poisoned because they accepted food from a stranger.

‘Mr Feng, confess,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Did you put poison in the food?’

‘If I wanted to poison you, I would have poisoned you the first day we met,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You have a point,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze had an opportunity to poison Da Tian Ting at the hospital. But she was still alive after she ate the breakfast he gave her.

A tiny part of Da Tian Ting felt happy there was a man showing interest in her who wasn’t Shang Duan Hua.

Feng Kai Ze was happy to see Da Tian Ting smiling and eating the lunch he got her. He was unhappy his phone ringing disturbed their alone time together. If it wasn’t Yang Fei, he would have switched off his phone. He stood, walked outside the dining room and answered Yang Fei’s phone call.

Da Tian Ting was happy Feng Kai Ze let her eat in peace. She admitted the

gourmet lunch he got her was as tasty as it looked.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Fifty-Nine to Sixty

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 18, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## 61 – 62

### UVB – Chapters Sixty-One to Sixty-Two

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Sixty-One to Sixty-Two



#### Chapter Sixty-One

Feng Kai Ze talked to Yang Fei in his apartment.

‘Yang Fei, for your sake, I hope you have something important to tell me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Kai Ze, boss wants you to come home and eat dinner tonight,’ Yang Fei said.

‘Why does he want me to come home and eat dinner?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I’m just the messenger,’ Yang Fei said. ‘Kai Ze, you’ve been back from overseas for a period now. Don’t you think it’s time for you to see boss?’

Feng Kai Ze ended the call. He resented receiving orders from his father.

Feng Kai Ze walked back to Da Tian Ting’s apartment. Seeing her calmed him down, and his world was peaceful again.

Da Tian Ting looked up from the empty gourmet box, and saw Feng Kai Ze returned to her dining room.

‘Mr Feng, this is the tastiest meal I ate in my life,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Where did you buy it?’

Da Tian Ting could afford to eat at fancy restaurants. But she never had the time to eat after work, because she took care of Shang Duan Hua. Looking back, she should have seen the liar neon sign pointing at Shang Duan Hua’s head, because he never once took her out to eat at a restaurant.

‘It’s good you liked the food,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I need to go do something. Tonight someone will deliver dinner to you. This is a remote neighborhood. It’s dangerous for you to go out on your own. When I’m not with you, don’t go out on your own.’

Da Tian Ting knew Feng Kai Ze had an agenda to be nice to her, but she liked having someone care about her. She wished Shang Duan Hua had been nice to her as Feng Kai Ze.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Sixty-Two**

Feng Kai Ze drove the Bugatti to the Feng Mansion. The guards bowed, and opened the front gate for him. Outsiders looking at the extravagant world his father pulled him into would wish his father was their father while he wished his father never knew of his existence.

Feng Kai Ze walked into the Feng Mansion, and a row of servants greeted him.

‘Young master Feng,’ the servants greeted.

In front of the servants, Feng Kai Ze put on a cold front.

‘Kai Ze, you’re finally home,’ Yang Fei said. ‘Boss is waiting for you.’

‘I’ll go see him,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze walked straight to the dining room. His father, step-mother and a young heiress sat at the dining table waiting for him.

Feng Kai Ze had a bad feeling, because his father rarely invited guests for dinner at the Feng Mansion.

Feng Kai Ze casually sat on a chair, and didn’t beat around the bush.

‘Father, why did you call me home for dinner tonight?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘What did you learn studying abroad?’ Feng Jia Yong asked. ‘Where are your manners? Don’t you know how to greet guests?’

‘She’s your guest, not mine,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I don’t need to greet her.’

‘You!’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘Kai Ze, it’s good you’re home,’ Dai Fang Dung said diplomatically. ‘Don’t fight with your father. This young lady here is Hong Shi’s company’s heiress, Hong Shi Na. Kai Ze, you and Shi Na met when you were children. Do you remember Shi Na?’

‘I don’t remember,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

In Feng Kai Ze’s memories there was only Da Tian Ting. He wasn’t interested in remembering irrelevant women.

Hong Shi Na was disappointed Feng Kai Ze didn’t remember her. They met at a birthday party. At that time he was thirteen and she was nine.

Hong Shi Na met Feng Kai Ze again. His good looks were dreamy like how she remembered.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Sixty-One to Sixty-Two

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 19, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapters Sixty-Three to Sixty-Four

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapters Sixty-Three to Sixty-Four



Sixty-Three

‘Feng Kai Ze, don’t you know how to greet people?’ Feng Jia Yong asked.

‘If you asked me here to greet your guest then there is no reason for me to stay,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Why do I have a bad son like you?’ Feng Jia Yong asked.

‘If I had a choice, I wouldn’t choose a father like you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Hong Shi Na didn’t know Feng Jia Yong and Feng Kai Ze’s relationship was like a pair of enemies’ relationship. But she didn’t regret coming to the Feng Mansion to see Feng Kai Ze again. She would feel proud and safe standing next to an outstanding man like Feng Kai Ze.

‘Enough fighting,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘You should be happy your son is home. Don’t fight with Kai Ze.’

‘If he isn’t my only child then I wouldn’t have brought him here,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘If you didn’t bring me here, my mother would be alive today,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

'You!' Feng Jia Yong said.

'Do you think I wanted you to bring me here?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Feng Kai Ze!' Feng Jia Yong said.

'Stop fighting,' Dai Fang Dung said. 'Don't embarrass yourselves in front of Shi Na.' She turned to Hong Shi Na, and smiled apologetically. 'Shi Na, aunty is sorry you witnessed this.'

'Aunty, every family has their own issues,' Hong Shi Na said. 'There are times I argue until I'm blue in the face with my dad.'

'Kai Ze is lucky to marry an understanding woman like Shi Na,' Dai Fang Dung said.

'What did you say?' Feng Kai Ze asked Dai Fang Dung.

Feng Kai Ze was only marrying once in his lifetime, and his wife would be Da Tian Ting.

'Kai Ze, your father asked you to come eat dinner here tonight so you can formally meet your fiancée...' Dai Fang Dung said.

'She's not my fiancée,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'There is no chance I'm marrying her.'

Feng Kai Ze's rejection stung Hong Shi Na, because she was used to men lining up to marry a beautiful and rich heiress like her.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Sixty-Four**

Dai Fang Dung patted Hong Shi Na's hand.

'Shi Na, Kai Ze doesn't mince words,' Dai Fang Dung said. 'Don't take his words to heart.'

'Shi Na, listen to uncle and aunty,' Feng Jia Yong said. 'It's uncle and aunty's fault for spoiling him rotten.'

Hong Shi Na regretted crying in front of Feng Kai Ze, because it gave him a bad impression of her.

Feng Kai Ze didn't want to waste time with a weepy heiress like Hong Shi Na.

He stood and walked to the door.

‘Come back here!’ Feng Jia Yong said.

Feng Kai Ze stood still, but kept his back to the three people at the dining table. He hated being inside the Feng Mansion.

‘Tonight you’re eating dinner here and taking Shi Na home after dinner,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

Feng Kai Ze was right, nothing good came out of eating dinner at the Feng Mansion. He turned around, and spoke with conviction.

‘That’s not going to happen,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘If you don’t do as I say today then I’ll...’ Feng Jia Yong said.

Feng Jia Yong didn’t have any ammunition to threaten Feng Kai Ze.

‘You’ll what?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘You won’t step a foot inside Feng’s company again and you won’t get a cent from me,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘I’m happy not to step foot inside Feng’s company again,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘But you should get your facts straight. For a long time now I haven’t spent a cent of your money.’

Feng Kai Ze looked down at Hong Shi Na.

‘And you should get your facts straight too,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Don’t have any delusions about me marrying you. The two people sitting next to you have no influence on who I marry.’

‘I...’ Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na was intimidated by the father and son. But she wanted to marry Feng Kai Ze.

‘I’ll be blunt,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I hate weepy women like you. If you have any common sense then retreat.’

‘You MF, shut your mouth!’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘What are you doing?’ Dai Fang Dung asked Feng Jia Yong. ‘Do you want break



apart our family?’

‘You stay out of this,’ Feng Jia Yong said to Dai Fang Dung. ‘Today I need to teach this unfilial son a lesson.’

Dai Fang Dung restrained Feng Jia Yong’s arm.

‘Don’t fight with Kai Ze,’ Dai Fang Dung said.

Feng Jia Yong pulled his arm out of Dai Fang Dung’s hands. He stood and slapped Feng Kai Ze’s face.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t avoid Feng Jia Yong’s slap. It wasn’t the first time Feng Jia Yong slapped his face. He had no respect for a man like his father.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Sixty-Three to Sixty-Four

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 19, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapters Sixty-Five to Sixty-Six

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapters Sixty-Five to Sixty-Six



Chapter Sixty-Five

‘Father, you got to curse and hit me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Is there anything else?’

‘You!’ Feng Jia Yong said.

Feng Jia Yong pretended he didn’t regret slapping Feng Kai Ze’s face.

‘I don’t care what you do with your life,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘The only thing I expect from you is for you to marry Shi Na.’

‘Don’t force me to oppose you,’ Feng Kai Ze warned.

Hong Shi Na didn’t know why there was a rift between the father and son. But she knew winning Feng Kai Ze’s heart was harder than touching clouds. She was going to do everything to win his heart.

‘I don’t care if you oppose me,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘The bride I’ve chosen for you is Shi Na.’

‘Why don’t you kill me and bring my corpse to marry her?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze turned around, and walked out of the Feng Mansion.

Dai Fang Dung retrained Feng Jia Yong's arm.

'Why can't you be civil toward Kai Ze?' Dai Fang Dung asked.

Dai Fang Dung was tired of seeing her husband fight with her step-son for sixteen years.

'It's your fault for coddling him,' Feng Jia Yong said.

'I can say I love Kai Ze like a mother loves their son,' Dai Fang Dung said. 'Can you say you've been a dutiful father toward Kai Ze? Why must you always be harsh toward Kai Ze?'

Dai Fang Dung was infertile. In her heart, Feng Kai Ze was her flesh and blood. It hurt her to see her husband treat Feng Kai Ze like a dictator treated their subordinate. Her life dream was to hear Feng Kai Ze willingly call her mother.

'Uncle, aunty, I should go home,' Hong Shi Na said. 'I'll come visit uncle and aunty another day.'

'Shi Na, aunty is really sorry you had to witness the ugly scene today,' Dai Fang Dung said.

Dai Fang Dung understood Feng Kai Ze was someone who didn't change their mind once they've made a decision. Even though she disagreed with her husband forcing Feng Kai Ze to marry Hong Shi Na, her hands were tied.

'Shi Na, I'll ask a driver to take you home,' Feng Jia Yong said.

'Uncle, my driver is waiting for me outside,' Hong Shi Na said. 'I'll see uncle and aunty another day.'

Hong Shi Na smiled sweetly at Feng Jia Yong and Dai Fang Dung. Then she walked to her driver's car.

'Jia Yong, you should admit the person in the wrong today is you,' Dai Fang Dung said.

'Go find my bastard son to nag,' Feng Jia Yong said.

'Jia Yong, Kai Ze hated living here since the first day you brought him here,' Dai Fang Dung said. 'Kai Ze resents you taking him away from his mother. If you

want Kai Ze to cut ties with you then you're succeeding.'

'Stop nagging,' Feng Jia Yong said. 'He's marrying Shi Na whether he wants to or not.'

Dai Fang Dung shook her head helplessly. Her husband and step-son were stubborn like each other.

\*\*\*

## Chapter Sixty-Six

Da Tian Ting waited for the dinner Feng Kai Ze said he would have someone deliver to her. But by five o'clock in the afternoon no one came to deliver dinner to her. So she accepted Da Ming Sheng's dinner invitation because she wanted to know what that snake wanted to scheme next.

Da Tian Ting arrived at a classy restaurant in the city at seven o'clock in the evening. The old clothes she wore didn't suit the classy restaurant.

'Big sister, over here,' Da Ming Sheng called.

Da Tian Ting walked to the table Da Ming Sheng reserved, and she sat opposite Da Ming Sheng.

'Big sister, dinner is my treat tonight,' Da Ming Sheng said.

'I can't stay long,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Tell me why you asked me to come here.'

'Big sister, I know you're angry at me about what happened last time,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'I asked big sister to come here because to talk about the pot of hot water incident.'

'Quit your innocent act,' Da Tian Ting said. 'What do you want?'

'Big sister, I want you to see the truth,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'I forgive big sister for burning my arm, because Duan Hua and I hurt you. Big sister, I'm going to tell you again, I didn't steal Duan Hua from you. Duan Hua left you because he hates you. In other words you mean nothing to him, and never had his heart so I didn't steal him from you.'

Da Tian Ting was still hurting the people she thought were her family chose to believe the two faced Da Ming Sheng. Da Ming Sheng forgave her? What a

deluded joke.

‘Big sister, I know you love Duan Hua,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘But Duan Hua and I love each other. I hope big sister will let go of Duan Hua, and truly wish us happiness.’

Da Tian Ting pushed Da Ming Sheng’s snake skin hand away from her hand.

‘Ming Sheng, don’t you think you’re deluded?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Ming Sheng shed tears to make herself look pitiful in front of the people at the restaurant.

‘Big sister, I know I’m asking a lot for you to wish Duan Hua and me happiness,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘But I’m marrying Duan Hua.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Sixty-Five to Sixty-Six

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 19, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapters Sixty-Seven to Sixty-Eight

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapters Sixty-Seven to Sixty-Eight



Chapter Sixty-Seven

‘Da Ming Sheng, if you loved a man for ten years, would you graciously hand over him to another woman?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘I...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Da Ming Sheng, don’t play the victim card,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘From the start you knew Duan Hua was my fiance. You chose to have an affair with him behind my back. If you and he were honest with me then we wouldn’t be in this situation.’

‘I...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Don’t tell me you never schemed to steal Duan Hua from me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘It doesn’t matter if everyone believes you, because now I can see straight through you.’

Da Tian Ting thought Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng made the perfect despicable pair.

‘Big sister, I’m pregnant with Duan Hua,’ Da Ming Sheng lied. ‘Please let me have a peaceful family with Duan Hua.’

‘Why are you crying?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘You jumped into Duan Hua’s bed so you should face the consequences.’

‘Big sister...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng sobbed loudly to attract the people in the restaurant’s attention.

‘Stop crying like you’re the victim,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Look at the vicious woman verbally attacking an innocent woman in public,’ a man said.

‘If I was a man, I wouldn’t want to marry the vicious woman,’ a woman said.

‘One look at the vicious woman and you can tell she’s an uneducated woman,’ another man said.

Da Tian Ting wasn’t going to stay and be wrongly accused by strangers. She stood and picked up her bag.

Da Ming Sheng stood next to Da Tian Ting, and knocked over Da Tian Ting’s hot cup of coffee.

‘Ah!’ Da Ming Sheng screamed.

Da Ming Sheng was happy everyone in the restaurant were looking at her.

‘Big sister, I know I wronged you,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘If pouring hot coffee on me will help you forgive me then the pain is worth it.’

Da Tian Ting couldn't believe Da Ming Sheng used the same trick to deceive people.

'Da Tian Ting!' Shang Duan Hua called. 'Are you assaulting Ming Sheng again?'

Shang Duan Hua appeared out of nowhere. He stood in between Da Tian Ting and Da Ming Sheng and he shoved Da Tian Ting back a couple of steps.

'Ming Sheng, you're pathetic,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Using the same trick to deceive people is getting old. You don't need to keep up the innocent act. I'm not going to stand in the way of you and Duan Hua marrying each other. I don't want anything to do with a lowlife man like Duan Hua.'

'Big sister, I...' Da Ming Sheng said.

'Da Ming Sheng, you've got what you wanted,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I'll come to yours and Duan Hua's wedding, and wish both of you happiness. On your wedding day, you should ask yourself if ten years from now Duan Hua will leave you for another woman like how he left me for you.'

Da Tian Ting left the perfect despicable behind in the restaurant.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Sixty-Eight**

Shang Duan Hua took Da Ming Sheng outside the restaurant to his car. He didn't notice her looking back at the restaurant and smirking at the spilt coffee on the floor.

Da Ming Sheng was happy Da Tian Ting stood at the same time she saw Shang Duan Hua walking into the restaurant. Da Ming Sheng was confident after Shang Duan Hua misunderstand Da Tian Ting a second time, he would cast Da Tian Ting out of his mind.

What Da Ming Sheng didn't expect was the Hong brother and sister saw everything clearly from a corner table in the restaurant.

Hong Shi Na could recognise a schemer like her any day. Hong Shi Na drank her coffee, and mocked Da Ming Sheng for not being a schemer in the same league as her.

Outside the CBD, Feng Kai Ze returned home at eleven o'clock at night. He was



worried why the dinner box was left untouched outside Da Tian Ting's apartment. He took out a key, and unlocked her door. The lights were off in her apartment. He turned on the lights, and walked to her bedroom. He saw her suitcase, but he didn't see her.

Feng Kai Ze called Da Tian Ting's phone. She was waiting at the bus stop, and didn't hear her phone ringing.

Feng Kai Ze was worried Da Tian Ting didn't answer her phone. He was going to call Yang Fei to find her if she didn't pick up soon.

'Hello,' Da Tian Ting greeted.

'Didn't I say it's dangerous for you to go out at night without me with you?' Feng Kai Ze asked. 'Where are you?'

'I...,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Tell me where you are and I'll come pick you up,' Feng Kai Ze said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Sixty-Seven to Sixty-Eight

## Share this:

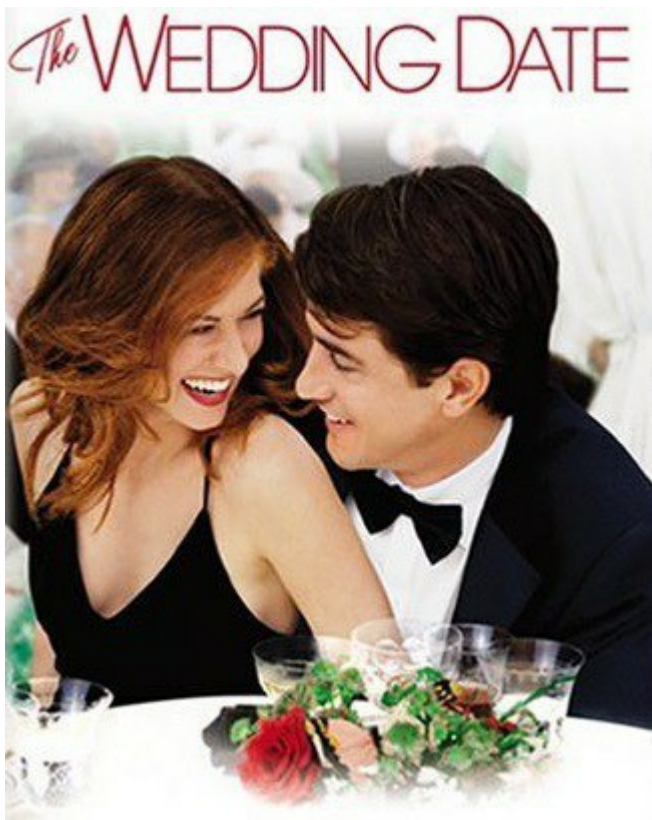
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 19, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Sixty-Nine

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Sixty-Nine



Feng Kai Ze drove to the address of the bus stop Da Tian Ting told him.

Feng Kai Ze parked near the bus stop, and walked to Da Tian Ting. She looked like someone hurt her. He hugged her, and kissed her lips. He preferred she cursed him instead of her thinking about something that made her sad.

Da Tian Ting was angry Feng Kai Ze kissed her without her consent. She bit his lips hard.

‘You...’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze tasted his blood. Da Tian Ting was still his fierce apple.

‘Mr Slimy, I said you can pick me up at the bus stop,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I didn’t say you can kiss me.’

‘What about you?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘What are you doing here in the middle of the night? Do you know how dangerous it is for you to be out this late on your own? Do you know how worried you made me?’

‘I don’t need your permission to go out,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Your safety is my business,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You...’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting was happy Feng Kai Ze seemed like he cared about her. After her confrontation with Da Ming Sheng and Shang Duan Hua, she was grateful to have someone care about her.

‘Why are you crying?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Did I hurt your lips?’

‘Mr Feng, I want you to be my boyfriend,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze couldn’t keep up with Da Tian Ting’s train of thoughts. She hopped from being sad to angry to crying then finally proposing him to be her boyfriend.

‘Mr Feng, don’t misunderstand,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I want you to be my fake boyfriend. I want to take you as my date to my ex-fiance and my cousin’s wedding.’

Feng Kai Ze was disappointed Da Tian Ting wanted him to be her fake boyfriend. But he thought it would be the perfect opportunity to get her to warm up to him, and want him to be her real boyfriend.

‘I’ll be your boyfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze agreed.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Sixty-Nine

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)

- 

***Related***

[November 19, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Seventy

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Seventy



‘Mr Feng, remember you’re my fake boyfriend,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting pictured Feng Kai Ze in a suit, and smiled. The wedding guests would fall for Feng Kai Ze’s looks and charm. He’d outshine Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng.

‘Right now I’m your fake boyfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘But in the near future you’ll be my real wife.’

‘Fake boyfriend,’ Da Tian Ting emphasized.

‘Da Tian Ting, mark my words, in this lifetime you’ll be my only woman and you can only be my wife,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Don’t you think I’m ugly?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting was fooled by Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng. She didn't want to be played by Feng Kai Ze too.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's shoulders, and dismissed her nonsense.

'Tell me what your plan is,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Forget about being my fake boyfriend,' Da Tian Ting said. 'It's impossible for an ugly duckling like me to turn into a beautiful swan. I should face my reality, and not hide behind a lie. I wanted to upstage Da Ming Sheng on her wedding day. I don't want to be the pitiful jilted fiancée. It's better if I don't go to the wedding.'

'How many days until the wedding?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Ten days,' Da Tian Ting said.

'We have a lot of time,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'What's your plan?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Trust me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'All you need to do is keep your head high and be confident.'

'Tell me your plan,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Do you want to transform into a beautiful swan and make the wedding guests' eyes fall out?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Yes,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Then for the next ten days you need to listen to everything I say,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'OK... wait,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Can you really turn me into a beautiful swan? If this is ploy for you to achieve your agenda then forget it.'

'Da Tian Ting, if I'm after your body, I would have dragged you to a street corner and have my way with you on the first day we met,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze must be a fool in love if he was in love with a foolish woman.

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze sounded reasonable. She wasn't beautiful or rich so he wouldn't be after her body. Did that mean he actually liked her? She shook her head, he wasn't someone trustworthy.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's hand.

'Hey,' Da Tian Ting said. 'What do you want to do to me?'

'Take you home,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting walked together to his Bugatti.

'Mr Feng, where's your friend's car?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'Who did you borrow this Bugatti from?'

'My friend took their car back,' Feng Kai Ze lied.

Feng Kai Ze didn't want to risk Da Tian Ting leaving him if she found out he was the heir of Feng's company. He knew she didn't love money, because she didn't like owing anyone money. He didn't want her to hate him because he was a rich man's son.

'Mr Feng, what's wrong?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting patted Feng Kai Ze's pauper shoulders sympathetically.

'Mr Feng, don't be so hard on yourself,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I know it's not easy being a pauper. I won't look down on you if you borrowed your friend's flashy cars to look good. My friend Xiao Ran's boyfriend is like you. He rented a flashy car to impress Xiao Ran. But he didn't need to because Xiao Ran likes him, and she doesn't care about his flashy rental car.'

Feng Kai Ze opened the passenger door for Da Tian Ting.

'It's two in the morning,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Get in the car. By the time we're home it'll be four in the morning.'

Da Tian Ting sat comfortably in Feng Kai Ze's friend's Bugatti.

Feng Kai Ze sat in the driver's seat, and buckled Da Tian Ting's seatbelt.

'Remember to wear your seatbelt,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'I forgot,' Da Tian Ting said. 'You have generous friends who loan you million dollar cars.'

Feng Kai Ze let Da Tian Ting misunderstand that she was sitting in his imaginary friend's car.

Feng Kai Ze drove at the legal speed limit.

‘Mr Feng, how come you’re so free to stalk me?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Don’t you need to go home and visit your parents?’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t want to think about his father and step-mother’s home. It wasn’t his home.

‘Mr Feng, are you an orphan?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze considered confiding in Da Tian Ting about his mother.

‘Mr Feng, I’m sorry,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I shouldn’t have asked an insensitive question. I’ll let you drive in peace.’

Feng Kai Ze put on relaxing music to help Da Tian Ting sleep in the car. After she fell asleep, he turned off the music. He loved being with her. He only loved two women in his life. One was his mother and the other woman was her. When his mother was alive, his mother loved him and took care of him despite being poor. One day, he and Da Tian Ting would love their children like how his mother loved him.

At four o’clock in the morning, Feng Kai Ze parked the car in front of his and Da Tian Ting’s apartment building. He carried her to her apartment and tucked her in bed.

‘Sweet dreams fierce apple,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze kissed Da Tian Ting’s lips goodnight, and returned to his apartment. He wanted to forget his confrontation with his father, and make happy memories with Da Tian Ting.

Da Tian Ting woke up the next day in her bed. She was wearing the same clothes from last night. It meant Feng Kai Ze wasn’t after body.

Da Tian Ting got out of bed, showered, dressed and walked to Feng Kai Ze’s apartment. She hesitated to ring his doorbell. When she was about to go back to her apartment, he opened the door.

‘Are you looking for me?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘No,’ Da Tian Ting lied.



Feng Kai Ze followed Da Tian Ting back to her apartment, and they sat in the living room. She was used to him following her around.

‘Mr Feng, did you take me home last night?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Besides me who else would take you home?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Mr Feng, confess,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Why are you so nice to me?’

‘Because I want you to be my wife,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze didn’t need to be rich to have his pick of women. She didn’t believe he wanted to marry someone who was ugly and poor like her.

‘Stop doubting yourself,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘One day you’ll believe that I want you to be my wife for the rest of your life. Right now, go change your clothes and I’ll take you out.’

Feng Kai Ze would be suspicious too if he was in Da Tian Ting’s shoes. Having a man like him suddenly show up, and tell her that she’d be his wife would make anyone weary.

‘Go where?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Aren’t you hungry?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Are you taking me to the restaurant where you bought lunch for me yesterday?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘If that is what you want, I’ll take you there to eat,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll go change. Wait for me.’

Da Tian Ting walked to her bedroom. Then she popped her head out of her bedroom door.

‘You’re not allowed to come in my room while I change,’ Da Tian Ting warned and closed the door.

Five minutes later, Da Tian Ting walked out in a T-shirt and jeans.

‘Do you only have one outfit?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Yes,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘After we eat, I’m going to take you shopping,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘We’ll go buy groceries.’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t bother explaining he wanted to buy her a whole new wardrobe of clothes.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s hand.

‘Mr Feng, you’re my fake boyfriend,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘When it’s just the two of us, you don’t need to hold my hand. Let go of my hand.’

‘If you don’t want others to see through your plan then we need to practice holding hands,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

In Feng Kai Ze’s eyes, Da Tian Ting was his real girlfriend.

‘There’s no one around,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘We don’t need to hold hands.’

‘We can’t be complacent,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘What if we run into a wedding guest when we walk outside? So we need to be vigilant at all times.’

‘Don’t you think you’re going overboard with this fake boyfriend act?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘This is called the road to success,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t let go of Da Tian Ting’s hand until they sat in his car.

Da Tian Ting sat comfortably in the car, and it didn’t feel long before Feng Kai Ze parked near a restaurant.

Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng were in the same neighbourhood as Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze. Da Ming Sheng spotted Da Tian Ting coming out of a Bugatti.

‘Duan Hua, is that big sister coming out of the Bugatti?’ Da Ming Shang asked.

‘It can’t be,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘You’re probably seeing things because of the times she assaulted you. I’m lucky I got to see her true colors.’

‘Duan Hua, I’ve forgiven big sister,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘You should forgive big sister too.’

‘You shouldn’t forgive a two faced woman like her,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Duan Hua, we wronged big sister first,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘It’s normal for big sister to take revenge.’

‘We haven’t done anything wrong,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘It’s all Da Zheng Li’s fault for asking my dad to make me be with her before he died.’

Da Ming Sheng was happy her schemes worked, and Shang Duan Hua had no lingering feelings for Da Tian Ting.

‘Duan Hua, I remembered what big sister said to me,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Ten years later will you leave me for another woman like how you left big sister for me?’

‘Ming Sheng, you’re pregnant with my baby and we’ll be a happy family, why would I leave you?’ Shang Duan Hua asked. ‘Don’t listen to a bitter woman like her.’

Da Ming Sheng planned on making Shang Duan Hua despise Da Tian Ting more, and stop him from ever finding out the truth.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Seventy

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 19, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Seventy-One

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Seventy-One



Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting to the most expensive restaurant in the city. She felt out of place in a restaurant full of rich people.

‘Mr Feng, let’s go somewhere else to eat,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s hand, and took her to a private corner table. He pulled out a chair for her, and they sat down.

‘This is the restaurant where I bought lunch for you yesterday,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Everything on the menu here is expensive,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t want to eat all the money in your wallet.’

Da Tian Ting only brought enough money to buy groceries. She didn’t want the pauper to become homeless.

Da Tian Ting held Feng Kai Ze’s hand, and failed to pull him up.

‘Where do you want to go?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Mr Feng, I’m not looking down on you,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I didn’t bring

enough money to even pay for one drink here. Later if we can't afford to pay, it'll be embarrassing. Let's go somewhere else to eat.'

'Money isn't an issue,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You can order as much as you want.'

'I'm not fussy about what I eat,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I'm happy to eat at a small cafe with you.'

'Trust me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I can afford to pay for you to eat at this restaurant.'

'You don't have to take me here to impress me,' Da Tian Ting said.

'What dishes do you want to order?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze didn't expect pretending to be a pauper would be a hard task.

A waiter came to take Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting's order.

'Sir, madam, what would you like to eat and drink today?' the waiter asked.

Da Tian Ting winked at Feng Kai Ze to signal him to leave with her. But he ordered a list of dishes she never heard of before that sounded expensive.

Feng Kai Ze gave the waiter the menu, and the waiter took his order to the kitchen.

'What are you thinking about?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'About your wallet,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Do you like my wallet?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'I'm thinking if what's inside your wallet can save your pride,' Da Tian Ting said.

'What do you mean?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'It means we'll be washing a lot of dishes today,' Da Tian Ting said.

'All you need to worry about is making your stomach full,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I'm taking you shopping after we eat.'

Since Feng Kai Ze acted confident, Da Tian Ting stopped worrying about washing dishes.

The waiter returned with the dishes Feng Kai Ze ordered. Da Tian Ting looked at the different spoons, forks and knives and was reminded of the past. She used

to do everything for Shang Duan Hua, and missed out on opportunities like learning how to use fancy cutlery.

‘Why aren’t you eating?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘I chose the dishes you liked yesterday.’

‘Mr Feng, aren’t you embarrassed to be seen in public with me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Why would I be?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze was angry at Shang Duan Hua for underestimating Da Tian Ting’s worth.

‘You know about my past,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘My fiance dumped me. I did everything for him for ten years. Now I don’t even know how to do simple things like how to use these fancy cutlery.’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t pass Da Tian Ting a tissue, because he knew she was putting on a brave front for him by holding back her tears.

‘I think highly of you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘To me Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng are pathetic people.’

‘Why?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Shang Duan Hua is shallow,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘He can’t see how beautiful your heart is. He’s blinded by Da Ming Sheng’s two faced act. Da Ming Sheng’s youth will fade soon, and not enough makeup can hide her decaying looks. She’s under the delusion that he loves her. But after her looks fade, he’ll leave her for a younger woman. Ten years from now, she can’t attract another rich man. You should thank him for dumping you, because you and I will have a happy life together.’

‘Do you think so?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Shang Duan Hua isn’t business savvy. Shang’s company will become insolvent under his management within a year. By then he’ll look for a younger woman to be his mistress to salvage his broken ego.’

‘How do you know that’s Shang Duan Hua’s future?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘I met a lot of men like him who only values appearance,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Those men are either in jail for corruption or homeless. Da Ming Sheng doesn’t know yet, but she saved you from having a desolate future.’

Feng Kai Ze sounded like he was jealous that Da Tian Ting used to spend time and energy on Shang Duan Hua. It cheered her up.

‘Mr Feng, thank you for cheering me up,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Let’s eat lunch,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Starting from today you can’t skip another meal.’

Da Tian Ting didn’t care if she didn’t know what the right cutlery to use was. She was happy to put food in her mouth. Feng Kai Ze made her feel comfortable to be herself, and he didn’t expect her to change. She enjoyed his company more than Shang Duan Hua’s company.

‘Mr Feng, judging by your speech mannerisms you sound like a highly educated person,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘What do you do for a living?’

Da Tian Ting’s impression of Feng Kai Ze improved a bit, but she didn’t trust him yet.

‘What happened to thinking I’m Mr Slimy?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I don’t trust you yet but I don’t think you would kill me in my sleep,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘In the future I’ll always be nice to you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t mention that he was capable of being ruthless toward anyone that wasn’t Da Tian Ting.

‘You haven’t told me what you do for a living yet,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I don’t have a job,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Impossible,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting didn’t think an orphan like Feng Kai Ze could afford to pay for their expensive lunch if he was jobless. He gave off a vibe that he had triad connections.

‘Right now I don’t have a job,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Then what did you used to do?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘The day you met me was the same day I came back from England,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting didn’t know orphans these days were well off enough to travel overseas.

‘Let’s finish our lunch,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze would eventually tell Da Tian Ting about his identity after she accepted him in her life.

Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting were enjoying their lunch together when a man interrupted their lunch.

‘Miss, aren’t you embarrassed to dress like this here?’ the man asked.

‘Sir, don’t you understand the concept of being civilized in a public place?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze was about to put the man in his place on behalf of Da Tian Ting, but she spoke up for herself.

Hong Shi Chi wanted to provoke the same woman who was framed at the restaurant. He didn’t expect she would stand up for herself.

‘A foolish woman like you who could be framed by a cup of coffee shouldn’t show herself in public,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘You were at the same restaurant as me yesterday?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Yes,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘I witnessed everything that happened at the restaurant yesterday. I didn’t help you because you’re a foolish woman who let yourself be framed.’

\*\*\*

## Chapter Seventy-One

### Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)



- 

***Related***

[November 19, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Seventy-Two

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Seventy-Two



Da Tian Ting was happy she stood up the obnoxious rich man. After the obnoxious rich man paid for their lunch, she held Feng Kai Ze's hand and they walked to his car.

'Aren't you scared he'll take revenge on you for insulting him?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze didn't say that Da Tian Ting had him in her corner so no one would dare take revenge on her.

'How can he take revenge on me if he doesn't know who I am?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'I hate rich people like him. He insulted me then he flaunted his money by paying for our lunch. People like him will end up in hell.'

Feng Kai Ze knew after he bought fitted clothes and light makeup for Da Tian Ting, she'd be a thousand times more beautiful than Da Ming Sheng.

Da Tian Ting felt uncomfortable having Feng Kai Ze stare at her, and let go of his hand.

‘There’s no one we know around us,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Stop taking advantage of me. You don’t need to hold my hand.’

‘You were holding my hand and taking advantage of me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘When did I hold your hand?’ Da Tian Ting denied.

Feng Kai Ze was the first man Da Tian Ting took the initiative to hold his hand. He gave her a sense of security unlike Shang Duan Hua. She didn’t feel comfortable letting Shang Duan Hua hold her hand.

Da Tian Ting let Feng Kai Ze hold her hand.

‘I’m taking you to the hair salon for a haircut first,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Why do I need a haircut?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Today I want to give you a makeover,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Why do I need a makeover?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Didn’t you say you want to outshine Da Ming Sheng?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Yesterday I was an emotional mess,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Today I’m thinking clearer. I don’t want to waste money pointlessly. How can I outshine Da Ming Sheng after a makeover?’

Da Tian Ting didn’t have the confidence her appearance could change drastically in less than nine days.

‘Do you think swans know they’re beautiful?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Trust me, a makeover will polish your natural beauty.’

‘Thank you for cheering me up,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Let’s go to the hair salon,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘There are other places I want to take you today. Like taking you to have a facial, and to buy new outfits.’

‘Can you take me home first?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Because I only have enough money on me to buy groceries.’

Da Tian Ting felt comfortable to say whatever was on her mind with Feng Kai Ze. She felt relaxed around him. Whereas she was always careful about what she said in front of Shang Duan Hua.

‘Da Tian Ting, if you mention money again, I’ll take you out to sea and throw you over the ship,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘I’m just being honest with you,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t have enough money on me to pay for a haircut, a facial and new outfits.’

Da Tian Ting wasn’t fazed by Feng Kai Ze’s idle threat.

‘I’m paying for your makeover,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Didn’t you say you’re jobless?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Since the obnoxious rich man paid for lunch, Da Tian Ting didn’t know if Feng Kai Ze was bluffing or not at the restaurant.

Feng Kai Ze opened the passenger door, and Da Tian Ting sat inside the car.

‘Don’t worry,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I didn’t rob anyone.’

Feng Kai Ze sat in the driver’s seat, and buckled his seatbelt.

‘Do you even have money in your bank account?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘If you want to know how much money I have in my bank account, marry me and I’ll tell you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘After you’re my wife, I’ll give you control over my money.’

‘Forget I asked,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Ten minutes later, Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting to an expensive hair salon.

‘Hey...’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting didn’t mention money again in case Feng Kai Ze would throw her into a sea.

A hairdresser smiled politely at Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze.

‘Sir, madam, how can I help you?’ the hairdresser asked.

‘Is there a VIP room here?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Yes sir,’ the hairdresser said. ‘But to use the VIP room, customers need to pay a VIP membership fee. Sir, it looks like it’s yours and madam’s first time here so neither of you can access the VIP room.’

‘We don’t need to go to the VIP room,’ Da Tian Ting said softly to Feng Kai Ze.

‘A regular haircut will suffice.’

Money didn’t fall out of the sky. Da Tian Ting didn’t want to waste a year worth of savings to pay the VIP membership fee.

‘Let me handle this,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze wanted to tell the hairdresser off for judging him and Da Tian Ting by their appearances. But Da Tian Ting squeezed his hand.

‘Don’t burn money,’ Da Tian Ting said softly.

Feng Kai Ze took out an unlimited bank card, and passed it to the hairdresser.

‘I want the salon’s best hairdresser to cut my girlfriend’s hair,’ Feng Kai Ze instructed.

The hairdresser’s eyes lit up, and spoke to Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting in a respectful tone of voice.

‘Sir, madam, follow me to the VIP room,’ the hairdresser said.

‘Take my girlfriend to the VIP room first,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I need to use the bathroom.’

Da Tian Ting felt uncomfortable being in an unfamiliar place. She would have followed the mysterious Feng Kai Ze if he didn’t go to the bathroom.

‘Madam, the salon’s best hairdresser will wash your first,’ the hairdresser said.

‘I washed my hair yesterday,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t need to wash my hair today.’

‘We wash all our clients’ hair before cutting their hair,’ the hairdresser explained.

‘Oh,’ Da Tian Ting said.

The hairdresser opened the VIP door for Da Tian Ting. She didn’t expect to see Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng to come out of the VIP room.

Da Ming Sheng was nervous to see Da Tian Ting. Da Tian Ting never been to a hair salon before. Why did the hairdresser escort Da Tian Ting into the VIP room? Did Da Tian Ting follow her and Shang Duan Hua to expose her schemes to him?

‘Big sister, are you here for a haircut?’ Da Ming Sheng asked sweetly.

Da Tian Ting ignored Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng. She realised while she worked, Shang Duan Hua brought Da Ming Sheng to salons.

‘Aren’t you embarrassed to dress like this at a prestigious hair salon?’ Shang Duan Hua asked. ‘Any man would be embarrassed to admit you’re his girlfriend.’

‘Shang Duan Hua, what are you implying?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Go to the mirror over there and see for yourself,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘You don’t suit this place.’

Da Tian Ting looked at her reflection. She looked like a country bumpkin compared to Da Ming Sheng. Da Ming Sheng wore a designer pink dress, heels, makeup and perfume.

‘Now do you see what an embarrassment you are?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

Da Ming Sheng was happy Shang Duan Hua mocked Da Tian Ting.

‘Duan Hua, big sister is a woman too,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘It’s normal for her to want to come to a place like this.’

‘If her head is shaved, people would mistake her for a man,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Shang Duan Hua, do you need to be this insulting?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘You deserve to be insulted after you assaulted Ming Sheng,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘Did you follow me and Ming Sheng here to take revenge on Ming Sheng again?’

‘When did I assault her?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘How can you deny the truth after you’ve been caught assaulting Ming Sheng?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

‘Shang Duan Hua, you should ask the woman standing next to you if she can swear on her life that I assaulted her,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Ming Sheng wasn’t scared of Da Tian Ting’s glare.

‘Big sister... I’m sorry,’ Da Ming Sheng stammered.

‘Da Tian Ting!’ Shang Duan Hua called. ‘If you’re angry then take your anger out on me instead of Ming Sheng. Ming Sheng is innocent, and doesn’t deserve to be threatened by someone vicious like you.’

The other clients quietly watched the fight from their seats.

‘Shang Duan Hua, if I’m vicious then it would be me standing next to you right now, not her,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Big sister, I’m sorry I wronged you,’ Da Ming Sheng said innocently.

‘Da Tian Ting, stop insulting someone innocent!’ Shang Duan Hua warned.

‘Shang Duan Hua, you’re a pathetic shallow man,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You let her appearance deceive you.’

‘Da Tian Ting, the only two faced person here is you,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

Da Ming Sheng was happy Shang Duan Hua believed her lies.

‘The truth will come out eventually,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Shang Duan Hua, when that day comes, it’ll be too late for you to regret.’

‘Da Tian Ting, no man would want to marry a vicious old maid like you,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Shang Duan Hua, you don’t need to worry about me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I have a man who wants to marry me.’

‘Da Tian Ting, I won’t believe your lies,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘The only friend you have is Ding Xiao Ran. There is no man who wants to marry you.’

‘I’ll bring him to yours and her wedding,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I can’t wait to see what dog or cat you’ll bring to mine and Ming Sheng’s wedding,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Shang Duan Hua, thank you for leaving me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Now I have a caring boyfriend who makes me happy. He’s a better man than you by a thousand times.’

‘Da Tian Ting, bring your imaginary boyfriend to the wedding,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘Ming Sheng, let’s go.’

Da Ming Sheng followed Shang Duan Hua downstairs. She secretly turned

around, and smirked at Da Tian Ting.

Da Tian Ting glared at the two faced Da Ming Sheng. She wasn't going to give Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng the satisfaction of having the last laugh.

The salon's best hairdresser witnessed the whole confrontation. He recognised Feng Kai Ze's bank card. He knew the two people who dared to insult Feng Kai Ze's girlfriend would meet a bad ending.

'Madam, speaking from experience, after you have a makeover, everyone will see that you're a thousand times more beautiful than that two faced woman before,' the best hairdresser said.

'Really?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Yes,' the best hairdresser said. 'First I'll wash your hair. Then I'll give you a new hairstyle that suits your apple face.'

The salon's best hairdresser washed Da Tian Ting's hair. He and his bank account were happy to serve Feng Kai Ze's girlfriend.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Seventy-Two

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

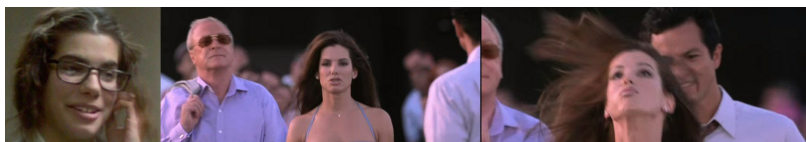
## *Related*

[November 19, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)



## UVB – Chapters Seventy-Three to Seventy-Four

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Seventy-Three to Seventy-Four



#### Chapter Seventy-Three

‘Duan Hua, were we too harsh on big sister?’ Da Ming Sheng asked. ‘Big sister lost everything because of us.’

Da Ming Sheng didn’t think she did anything wrong. If she was a good person like Da Tian Ting, she would lose everything too.

‘Don’t sympathise with her anymore,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘But...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘No buts,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘It’s a good thing she’s not living in your home anymore. If she was, I’ll get you to move out. You must have suffered a lot living with a two faced person like her.’

‘Duan Hua...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Forget her,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘We have a dinner function to attend tonight. Let’s go get ready.’

Da Ming Sheng wasn’t going to give Da Tian Ting a chance to steal Shang Duan Hua from her.

In the hair salon, Da Tian Ting thought about Feng Kai Ze’s words of encouragement. He was right, she deserved a happy future.

‘Wait, don’t use that shampoo brand for my hair!’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting didn’t want any association with Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng, including the shampoo brand that he liked.

‘Madam, what shampoo brand do you want me to use?’ the hairdresser asked.

‘I like all shampoo brands except for this one,’ Da Tian Ting said.

The hairdresser used a different shampoo brand to wash Da Tian Ting’s hair. He remembered Feng Kai Ze’s instruction not to mention Feng’s company in front of Da Tian Ting.

‘Madam, if the water temperature isn’t to your liking, I’ll change the water temperature,’ the hairdresser said.

‘I’m not a fussy person,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘The truth is this is the first time another person washed my hair. It’s relaxing.’

‘Madam, if you come get your hair styled here often, you’ll get used to having your hair washed,’ the hairdresser said.

Feng Kai Ze wasn’t back from the bathroom. Da Tian Ting was worried he did a runner, and she fell into a trap. How was she going to pay if she didn’t have enough money on her?

‘Madam, I’m done washing your hair,’ the hairdresser said. ‘I’ll take you to your seat.’

‘Thank you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Sir, do you know where the man I came here with is?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘No madam,’ the hairdresser said.

‘He’s the handsome man who always has a constipated expression on his face,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I’m sorry madam,’ the hairdresser said. ‘Every day I see a lot of stern handsome men bring their girlfriends here. I can’t tell them apart.’

‘Are you looking for me?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Da Tian Ting looked in the mirror. Feng Kai Ze’s magazine hid his face before so she didn’t see him sitting behind her.

'I thought you did a runner and left me stranded,' Da Tian Ting said.

'If I did a runner, I wouldn't be sitting here waiting for you,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze wouldn't ever abandon Da Tian Ting. He didn't understand why she would think he was that kind of man.

'Were you worried I left without you?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'No,' Da Tian Ting denied.

'You don't need to worry, I'll never leave you,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Really?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Yes,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting thought she was worried for nothing. Even if Feng Kai Ze did a runner, she would call Ding Xiao Ran to come pay for her. But she was happy he didn't leave her. She hated the feeling of being unwanted and abandoned.

'Mr F...' the hairdresser said.

'Choose a suitable haircut for my girlfriend,' Feng Kai Ze interrupted.

'Yes sir,' the hairdresser said.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Seventy-Four**

Da Tian Ting endured hours of having her hair prodded for the sake of outshining Da Ming Sheng.

Da Tian Ting didn't know how Feng Kai Za could patiently sit still for hours. She noticed he only smiled at her, and acted indifferent to other people. What did he want from her?

'Madam, do you like your new haircut?' the hairdresser asked. 'I can change it if you don't like it.'

Da Tian Ting didn't recognise herself. She didn't know having her hair cut to frame her face and highlights in her hair would make such a big difference.

'It looks really good,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Madam, I can take you to the third floor where a beautician can give you a

facial and put light makeup on your face,' the hairdresser said. 'And there is an exclusive dress boutique on the third floor too.'

'N...' Da Tian Ting said.

'Let's go to the third floor,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Since Feng Kai Ze was confident he could afford to pay for Da Tian Ting's facial and a new outfit too, she followed him to the third floor.

'Sir, madam, how can I help you?' the beautician asked.

'You have one hour to give my girlfriend a facial and put light makeup on her face,' Feng Kai Ze instructed. 'And choose a suitable dress for my girlfriend to wear.'

'Yes sir,' the beautician said.

'Hey...' Da Tian Ting said.

The beautician escorted Da Tian Ting to the beauty salon room before she could protest.

Feng Kai Ze took a seat in the waiting room on the third floor, and waited for Da Tian Ting.

The women on the third floor were gravitated toward Feng Kai Ze.

'Sir, did you bring your girlfriend here?' the first woman asked.

'I hate the strong perfume you're wearing,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Get out of my sight before I lose my temper.'

'Sir, you don't need to bite my head off,' the first woman said. 'I've seen better looking men than you.'

The first woman walked downstairs away from the rude man.

The second woman who approached Feng Kai Ze was more daring than the first woman. The second woman flaunted her cleavage in front of him.

'Do you want a taste?' the second woman asked seductively.

'Do you want a taste?' Feng Kai Ze asked sarcastically.

'I like upfront men like you,' the second woman said. 'Let's leave now.'

‘OK,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll call a gigolo to come serve you. Do you still want a taste?’

‘You!’ the second woman said.

‘You have one minute to get out of my sight,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘And you should cover up your saggy chest.’

The second woman walked downstairs rejected like the first woman.

One hour later Da Tian Ting came out of the beauty salon room. She anticipated Feng Kai Ze’s reaction.

Feng Kai Ze saw another woman who wasn’t Da Tian Ting stood in front of him, and lost his temper.

‘Get out of my sight!’ Feng Kai Ze warned.

‘Fine!’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll get out of your sight right now.’

Da Tian Ting was disappointed Feng Kai Ze hated her new look that much.

Da Tian Ting walked away from Feng Kai Ze in three inch heels.

Feng Kai Ze thought he heard Da Tian Ting’s voice come out of the woman he told to get out of his sight. He put the magazine down, and chased after her.

Da Tian Ting wasn’t used to wearing heels, and lost her footing.

‘Ah...’ Da Tian Ting cried out.

Feng Kai Ze braced Da Tian Ting’s fall. But he lost his footing too. He fell on a sofa, and she fell on top of him. Their lips collided too.

The clients on the third floor thought Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting were a kinky young couple who looked like they were going to do the horizontal in public.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t expect he and Da Tian Ting would land in a compromising situation. But he was happy with the outcome, and kissed her lips tenderly.

A minute later, Da Tian Ting freed herself from Feng Kai Ze’s arms and stood.

‘Mr Slimy!’ Da Tian Ting called.

The clients didn’t know why Da Tian Ting was upset with Feng Kai Ze, because they saw her make the first move on him.

Da Tian Ting wiped the lipstick off her lips.

‘Mr Slimy, you told me to get out of your sight,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Why did you pull me onto the sofa and kissed me?’

‘It was an accident,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Liar,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting didn’t want to admit she knew it was an accident. She was hurt because Feng Kai Ze told her to get out of his sight, he became another person who rejected her.

‘It really was an accident,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze noticed Da Tian Ting wiped the lipstick off her lips.

‘Bring the lipstick here,’ Feng Kai Ze instructed the beautician.

‘Yes sir,’ the beautician said.

Feng Kai Ze accepted the lipstick from the beautician, and he applied it on Da Tian Ting’s lips.

‘Da Tian Ting, right now you’re outshining Da Ming Sheng,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Seventy-Three to Seventy-Four

**Share this:**

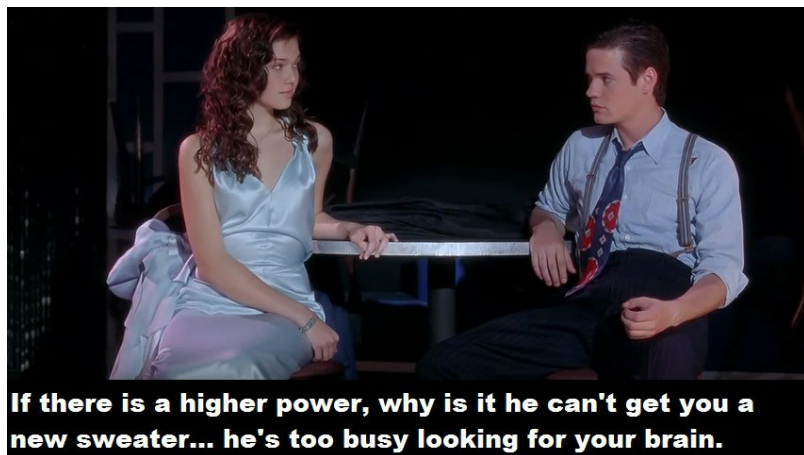
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 19, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Seventy-Five to Seventy-Six

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Seventy-Five to Seventy-Six



#### Chapter Seventy-Five

The clients on the third floor were envious of Da Tian Ting for snagging a man like Feng Kai Ze.

‘Do you think so?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn’t notice the clients’ envious looks. She was happy to hear Feng Kai Ze say he was satisfied with her new look. If what he said was true then she wanted to strut in front of Da Ming Sheng.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting looked at her reflection in the full length mirror. She couldn’t believe how smooth her skin looked after a facial, and the light makeup made her face look flawless.

Da Tian Ting liked the knee length lavender dress she wore with black heels. Her new hairstyle and jewellery matching the lavender dress made her look like an elegant young woman.

Da Tian Ting felt the waxing, plucking and pruning were worth it. She felt like a beautiful swan.

‘Keep your head high and be confident,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Then you’ll be even more beautiful.’

‘I will,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze linked arms with Da Tian Ting.

‘What are you doing?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘You’re my girlfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You need to stick close to me when we’re in public.’

‘Oh,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting believed Feng Kai Ze because she had seen Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng linked arms together on the streets like other young couples.

Da Tian Ting thought she and Feng Kai Ze looked like a beautiful couple.

‘Beautiful,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘This is nothing,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Wait until their wedding. I’ll help you look your best.’

‘Is it possible for me to look more beautiful?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Let’s go. I want to take you shopping.’

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze wanted to take her grocery shopping. She was wrong, he took her to an expensive women’s clothing shop. The price tag of one lingerie was a four figure amount. He had spent a lot of money on her makeover. She didn’t want him to become homeless if he bought her expensive outfits.

‘Mr Feng, let’s leave,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Why?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Just buying one lingerie set here will make me bankrupt,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Let’s leave.’



‘Da Tian Ting, this is my last warning,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If you mention money again, I’m taking you to the sea right now and throw you over a ship.’

A shop assistant greeted Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting.

‘Sir, Miss, how can I help you?’ the shop assistant asked.

‘I want you to choose ten casual outfits, ten formal dresses and ten lingerie sets of the best quality for my girlfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze instructed.

‘Yes sir,’ the shop assistant said.

The shop assistant was grateful toward Feng Kai Ze, she was going to receive a big sale commission. The cost of one outfit in the shop was a six figure amount. Most rich people could only afford to buy one outfit. But Feng Kai Ze wanted to buy twenty outfits and lingerie for Da Tian Ting.

‘Mr Feng, do I look like I can make money fall out of the sky?’ Da Tian Ting asked softly. ‘Tomorrow I’ll become a homeless beggar if I buy that many outfits here.’

Da Tian Ting wanted to pay Feng Kai Ze back for her makeover and new outfits after she got a new job. If she bought even one outfit from the expensive shop, she would owe him money for the rest of her life.

‘I told you, I’m paying for your new wardrobe,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Stop worrying about money.’

‘I don’t want to owe you a cent,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Whatever you spent on me today, I’ll pay you back in the future. I can’t afford to shop here. Let’s leave.’

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s hand, and didn’t let her leave the shop.

‘I changed my mind,’ Feng Kai Ze said to the shop assistant. ‘I want you to choose fifteen casual outfits, fifteen formal dresses and fifteen lingerie sets for my girlfriend.’

Da Tian Ting thought she was right about Feng Kai Ze being coo-coo. Why else would he burn money?

‘Sir, the sum of the outfits you want to buy your girlfriend is an eight figure amount,’ the shop assistant said. ‘Sir, do you still want me to choose that many outfits for your girlfriend?’

Feng Kai Ze took out his bank card and passed it to the shop assistant.

‘Miss, follow me to the change room,’ the shop assistant said.

‘Hey...’ Da Tian Ting said.

The shop assistant whisked Da Tian Ting to the change room before she could ask Feng Kai Ze about the bank card he passed to the shop assistant. She wanted to know what was special about his bank card that made people dance to his tune.

Feng Kai Ze sat on a chair outside the change room, and read a magazine.

Da Tian Ting showed Feng Kai Ze the first outfit she changed into.

‘Not bad,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll take it.’

‘Mr Feng, the outfit I’m wearing, including heels, accessories and handbag is three hundred thousand dollars,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Do you still want it?’

Da Tian Ting wanted to give back the outfit she wore. Three hundred thousand dollars was worth more than the apartment she rented.

‘Three hundred thousand dollars is nothing,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Change into the next outfit.’

The shop assistant suspected Feng Kai Ze was the heir of Feng’s company, which meant three hundred thousand dollars was lunch money to him.

‘Miss, I’ll help you choose your next outfit,’ the shop assistant said.

Da Tian Ting changed into the next outfit, and prepared herself to be embarrassed when Feng Kai Ze’s bank card was declined at the counter.

‘I like it,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll take this one too.’

Da Tian Ting liked the formal dresses from the shop. If she wore one of the formal dresses to the wedding, it would make Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng’s eyes pop out. But before the formal dresses were paid, she didn’t let herself get attached to the formal dresses.

One hour later, Da Tian Ting had changed into fifteen outfits and fourteen formal dresses. She didn’t have much left in her tank. She told herself after she changed into one more formal dress, she could leave the shop.

Feng Kai Ze sat while Da Tian Ting changed into different outfits so he wasn't tired.

'Kai Ze?' Hong Shi Na asked. 'Why are you here?'

Hong Shi Na didn't know why Feng Kai Ze was sitting outside the change room of a women's clothing shop.

'None of your business,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'And you don't have my permission to call me by my name.'

Feng Kai Ze didn't know why Hong Shi Na had to show up when he was out with Da Tian Ting. He didn't know what to explain to Da Tian Ting if Hong Shi Na exposed his identity.

'Mr Feng, what do you think of this last dress?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting noticed the beautiful woman standing next to Feng Kai Ze, and she smiled politely at the woman.

'If you're satisfied with this dress then we can leave,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I'm hungry. I want to go eat dinner.'

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Seventy-Six**

Hong Shi Na didn't want to see Feng Kai Ze look lovingly at Da Tian Ting. Da Tian Ting was the reason why Feng Kai Ze didn't want to marry her.

Hong Shi Na was the perfect princess in everyone's eyes. Why did Feng Kai Ze hate her?

Feng Kai Ze didn't notice the weepy Hong Shi Na. He focused his attention on Da Tian Ting.

'Looks good,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I'll take it too.'

'There wasn't one outfit you didn't like,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Are you sure you didn't just say yes to all the outfits?'

'You have a beautiful body,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'So you look beautiful in all the outfits you wore.'

'Are you telling the truth?' Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Wear this dress to dinner.’

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze was joking. Why would she wear a three hundred thousand dollar formal dress to a casual dinner?

Hong Shi Na wished she was Da Tian Ting, because she wanted Feng Kai Ze to pay attention to her.

‘Shi Na, did you find a dress you like?’ Hong Shi Na’s friend asked.

Hong Shi Na’s friend was startled to see her cry.

‘Shi Na, what’s wrong?’ the friend asked.

‘Nothing,’ Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na noticed Feng Kai Ze’s attention was only focused on Da Tian Ting. What should she do to get him to love her? She wanted to marry him, but he rejected her.

‘Shi Na, do you like the dress that woman is wearing?’ the friend asked.

Hong Shi Na was envious Da Tian Ting could be herself in front of Feng Kai Ze. It meant he and Da Tian Ting must have a good relationship. She wanted to know how Da Tian Ting captured his heart.

‘Miss, my friend Hong Shi Na likes the dress you’re wearing,’ the friend said to Da Tian Ting. ‘I want you to take this dress off, and give it to Hong Shi Na.’

‘Hong Shi Na?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting thought Hong Shi Na’s name rang a bell.

‘Her name sounds familiar to me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Hong Shi Na is the heiress of Hong Shi’s company,’ the friend said. ‘Now do you understand?’

‘You’re right,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘The heiress of Hong Shi’s company is named Hong Shi Na.’

Da Tian Ting heard on the news that Feng’s company helped make Hong Shi’s company successful, which meant offending Hong Shi Na was equivalent to offending an executive from Feng’s company.

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll go change, and I’ll give this dress to Miss Hong.’

Feng Kai Ze wrapped an arm around Da Tian Ting’s waist.

‘This dress belongs to you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Ignore them.’

‘I haven’t paid for this dress yet so it doesn’t belong to me,’ Da Tian Ting said.  
‘Let me go change.’

‘No,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘This dress is yours. You don’t need to change.’

‘Mr Feng, have you lost your brain?’ Da Tian Ting asked softly. ‘We can’t afford to buy this dress. There’s no reason for us to fight Miss Hong over this dress.’

‘I’m paying for it right now,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘This dress is yours.’

Feng Kai Ze gave the shop assistant the card he had wrote his address on while waiting.

‘Wrap up the outfits you chose for my girlfriend and deliver them to this address,’ Feng Kai Ze instructed. ‘Keep this address confidential. If you don’t this shop will be closed down.’

‘Yes sir,’ the shop assistant said. ‘I’ll keep this address confidential.’

Da Tian Ting didn’t get to take a close look at Feng Kai Ze’s bank card.

‘Mr Feng, are you still looking for your brain?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘We can’t offend Miss Hong. Besides, you’re jobless. Do you want to die from burning money?’

‘I’ve paid everything for you today,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Let’s not fight over a dress,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll go change.’

‘You’re wearing this dress to dinner,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘We’re only going to dinner,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t need to wear this dress.’

‘It’s yours,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You don’t need to give it to someone else.’

Da Tian Ting noticed Hong Shi Na crying. Why did Hong Shi Na cry over a dress?

‘Sir, here is your receipt,’ the shop assistant said.

Feng Kai Ze accepted the receipt, and took Da Tian Ting outside.

Da Tian Ting’s suspicions were confirmed, Feng Kai Ze must have triad connections. Why else could he afford to pay for her new wardrobe, and not be scared of offending Hong Shi Na?

Hong Shi Na didn’t want Feng Kai Ze to leave with Da Tian Ting.

‘Shi Na, who’s that man?’ the friend asked.

‘Feng Kai Ze,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘What?’ the friend asked. ‘Feng Kai Ze, your fiance?’

‘Yes,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘Keep what you saw today a secret.’

Hong Shi Na pretended she didn’t see Feng Kai Ze with Da Tian Ting. She considered it as him sowing wild oats before their wedding. Thinking of ways to make him love her was her priority.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Seventy-Five to Seventy-Six

**Share this:**

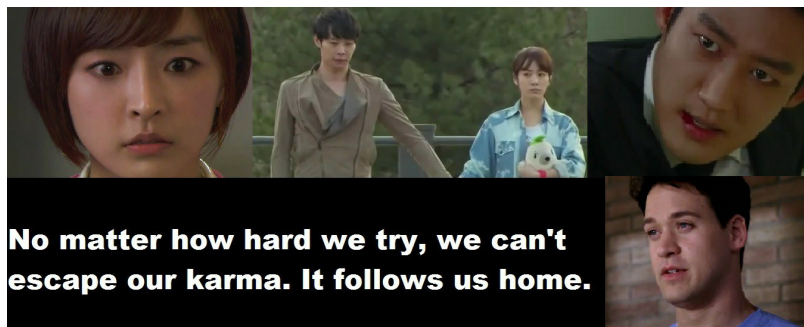
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 20, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Seventy-Seven to Seventy-Eight

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Seventy-Seven to Seventy-Eight



#### Chapter Seventy-Seven

On the streets, Da Tian Ting confronted Feng Kai Ze.

‘Tell me who you are,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting wanted to know why Feng Kai Ze would burn money on her.

‘I’m Feng Kai Ze,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘I know your name is Feng Kai Ze,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘What I want to know is your real identity. Why didn’t you blink while burning money?’

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze’s name sounded familiar to her.

‘Tell me, what is my identity?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘If I knew, I wouldn’t ask you,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Tell me what you’re hiding from me.’

‘If you want to know, marry me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll tell you everything you want to know about me, including the number of hair on my body.’

Da Tian Ting warned herself that she couldn’t trust someone mysterious like

Feng Kai Ze.

‘Let’s go eat dinner,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s hand, and she pulled her hand free.

‘Don’t touch me without my permission,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Have you forgotten that you’re my girlfriend?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Da Tian Ting let Feng Kai Ze hold her hand, because she needed him to attend the wedding with her.

‘After the wedding, you go your way and I’ll go my way,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You’re not allowed to follow me around after the wedding.’

Da Tian Ting reasoned she could put up with Feng Kai Ze because she wanted to take revenge on Da Ming Sheng and Shang Duan Hua by looking her best and living a happy life.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t state his intentions to follow Da Tian Ting around for life.

Da Tian Ting let go of Feng Kai Ze’s hand again to answer her phone.

‘Yes uncle,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll come there now.’

Da Tian Ting ended the call with a heavy heart. She didn’t want to go back to her uncle’s home.

‘What happened?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘My uncle wants me to go to his home to pick up something important that I left behind,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘What is it?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘He said he wants to give it to me in person,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I’ll come with you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘No,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t want uncle to misunderstand about us.’

‘Have you forgotten?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘I’m your boyfriend who you’re taking to the wedding. Everyone will know I’m your boyfriend including your uncle.’

Da Tian Ting accepted if the people she thought were her family who misunderstood her, another misunderstanding wasn’t going to make a



difference.

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Come with me to my uncle’s home.’

Half an hour later, Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Tian arrived at her uncle’s home.

Da Qing Feng heard the doorbell, and opened the door.

‘Tian Ting... who is this?’ Da Qing Feng asked.

Da Qing Feng thought his niece transformed into a different person. His niece looked more beautiful than his daughter, and made a striking couple with the man standing next to her.

‘Uncle...’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Hello uncle,’ Feng Kai Ze greeted. ‘I’m Tian Ting’s boyfriend.’

‘Boyfriend?’ Da Qing Feng asked.

Da Qing Feng didn’t know how his niece moved out for a few days, and returned with a new boyfriend.

‘Uncle, what’s wrong?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Nothing,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Come inside.’

Feng Kai Ze walked inside with Da Tian Ting. Her uncle’s home was a shoe box. He understood why Da Ming Sheng graduated three years ago but invested in beauty regimes instead of job hunting. Da Ming Sheng wanted to snag a rich man to escape poverty.

Da Qing Feng quickly hid the pile of unpaid bills and junk mail on the coffee table. He didn’t expect his niece to bring home a new boyfriend.

‘Take a seat,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Qing Feng, is Tian Ting here?’ Ning Kan asked from the kitchen. ‘Tell her to clean the apartment. It’s a mess.’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t care about the size of the apartment. He cared about how Da Tian Ting’s family treated her. Ning Kan’s unfiltered words spoke volumes, Da Tian Ting was her family’s slave for ten years. What kind of uncle and aunt called their niece to their home and demand their niece to do housework after their daughter stole their niece’s fiancé?

Da Qing Feng smiled awkwardly at Feng Kai Ze who looked like he was about to explode.

Da Tian Ting was used to doing housework, and her body automatically turned into cleaning mode.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's hand.

'You don't need to clean their home,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'It won't take long for me to clean the place,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Tian Ting, this isn't your home,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Don't clean another person's home.'

'Tian Ting, he's right,' Da Qing Feng said. 'You don't need to clean. Take a seat.'

'Uncle...' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting was a neat freak. She couldn't believe what a pig sty her uncle's home turned into after she was gone for a few days.

'Tian Ting, ignore your aunt,' Da Qing Feng said.

'Yes uncle,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting sat next to Feng Kai Ze on the sofa.

'Tian Ting, when did you meet your boyfriend?' Da Qing Feng asked. 'Why didn't you tell me about your boyfriend?'

'Uncle...' Da Tian Ting said.

'Uncle, Tian Ting and I have only been together for a short time but I love her,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'After I heard Tian Ting's fiancé left her, I did everything to make her my girlfriend.'

Da Tian Ting was amazed at how convincing Feng Kai Ze's lies sounded. If she didn't know the truth, she would have believed him.

'Qing Feng, tell Tian Ting to go buy groceries after she's done cleaning the toilet,' Ning Kan said from the kitchen. 'There's nothing left in the fridge.'

\*\*\*

## Chapter Seventy-Eight

Da Tian Ting heard toilet come out of Ning Kan's mouth, and her senses returned to her. It hurt to accept that her family saw her as their slave.

'Qing Feng, Ming Sheng and I used up our monthly allowance,' Ning Kan said from the kitchen. 'Tell Tian Ting to pay the water bill, and take out the garbage on the way out.'

'Ning Kan, shut your mouth!' Da Qing Feng yelled from the living room.

Ning Kan ran to the living room, and crossed her arms.

'Why did you raise your voice at me?' Ning Kan asked. 'Did you take the wrong medicine...'

Ning Kan thought she was seeing things. Impossible, how could Da Tian Ting suddenly turned into a beautiful woman after a few days?

'Tian Ting, don't think you can steal Duan Hua from Ming Sheng because you polished yourself up,' Ning Kan warned.

'I...' Da Tian Ting said.

'Tian Ting, aren't you ashamed of yourself?' Ning Kan asked. 'Duan Hua is marrying Ming Sheng in a few days. You shouldn't scheme to break up a happy couple. When will you accept Duan Hua hates you? If you came here hoping to see Duan Hua then you wasted a trip. Duan Hua took Ming Sheng to a dinner function tonight.'

Da Qing Feng stood, and slapped Ning Kan's cheek.

'Ning Kan!' Da Qing Feng said. 'Ming Sheng's stealing Duan Hua from Tian Ting made me ashamed to call Ming Sheng my daughter. Ning Kan, I didn't expect you to say hurtful things to Tian Ting like this. You and Ming Sheng only know how to gang up on Tian Ting.'

'Da Qing Feng, you dare hit me because of an outsider!' Ning Kan said.

'How can you call my big brother's daughter an outsider?' Da Qing Feng asked.

'Your big brother died ten years ago, his daughter has nothing to do with our family,' Ning Kan said.

‘Ning Kan!’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Did I say anything wrong?’ Ning Kan asked. ‘What did he give you after he died? He only gave you a burden called Da Tian Ting. We took care of her for ten years so we owe him nothing.’

‘You!’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Da Ming Sheng, I’ve resented you for ten years,’ Ning Kan said. ‘You only care about Tian Ting. Have you forgotten that Ming Sheng is your daughter? How can you stand here, and let Tian Ting scheme to take Duan Hua away from Ming Sheng? Don’t you care about Ming Sheng’s happiness?’

Da Tian Ting finally understood in the eyes of the people she called family for ten years, she was an outsider.

Feng Kai Ze stood, pulled Da Tian Ting up and hugged her.

‘Tian Ting, you have me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m your family. You can rely on me to protect you.’

Feng Kai Ze’s warm words made Da Tian Ting’s cold heart melt a little.

‘In the future you’re not allowed to come here without me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Ning Kan noticed Feng Kai Ze after she heard his voice.

‘Tian Ting, you and he...’ Ning Kan said.

It was the first time Ning Kan saw Da Tian Ting hug a man.

‘He is Tian Ting’s boyfriend, a better man than Duan Hua,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Ning Kan, if you live without a conscience, one day you’ll face bad karma. You accused me of not caring about Ming Sheng. Tell me, how I should show that I care about Ming Sheng. Help Ming Sheng steal her cousin’s fiancée? Ming Sheng has graduated for three years. What has she done for three years? She slept in her cousin’s fiancée’s bed for three years! It’s Tian Ting who worked relentlessly for ten years to help me share the burden of supporting you and Ming Sheng. What did you and Ming Sheng spend Tian Ting’s and my money on? You and Ming Sheng spent it on clothes and makeup to use to steal a shallow man like Duan Hua from Tian Ting!’

‘I...’ Ning Kan said.

‘Ning Kan, take a good at yourself,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Tian Ting moved out because of Ming Sheng’s betrayal. How can you stand here and ask Tian Ting to clean the toilet, pay the water bill, buy groceries and take out the garbage? Have you forgotten Ming Sheng is your daughter? Why aren’t you asking your daughter to work to support you?’

‘You...’ Ning Kan said.

‘Ning Kan, do you actually believe Ming Sheng will be happy if she marries Duan Hua?’ Da Qing Feng asked. ‘I’m telling you now, Ming Sheng and Duan Hua will have an unhappy marriage. You and Ming Sheng are going to regret what both of you did to Tian Ting. My big brother’s will has a clause about what happens if Duan Hua and Tian Ting don’t marry each other.’

‘Qing Feng, I didn’t think about his will,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Is it wrong of me to want my daughter to be happy?’

‘Ning Kan, how selfish can you be?’ Da Qing Feng asked.

‘I...’ Ning Kan said.

‘Aunt, you don’t have to worry,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I have no intention of stealing Duan Hua from Ming Sheng, because Duan Hua is a lowlife.’

‘You!’ Ning Kan said.

Ning Kan believed Da Ming Sheng would be happy married to a rich man like Shang Duan Hua. She thought Da Tian Ting looked down on Shang Duan Hua because Da Tian Ting was a bitter jilted woman.

‘Uncle, you asked me to come here to pick up something I left behind,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Uncle, what did I leave behind?’

Da Qing Feng took out an old locked box from a drawer, and gave it to Da Tian Ting.

‘Tian Ting, your father asked me to give this to you on your wedding day,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘I’m sorry I broke your father’s promise.’

Da Tian Ting held her father’s box in her hands. She thought her father didn’t leave anything for her.

‘Uncle, where is the key to open my father’s box?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘The key is in your mother’s hands,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Your mother prepared this box for your wedding day since you turned sixteen. I didn’t expect your mother and your father to...’

‘Uncle, I don’t need this box,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’m giving it back to uncle.’

‘Tian Ting, your father and mother both prepared this box for you,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘If you don’t want it, hide it somewhere it’ll be hard for you to find later.’

‘Tian Ting, take the box,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘It’s yours. Perhaps it’s something important about the past.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Seventy-Seven to Seventy-Eight

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 20, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapters Seventy-Nine to Eighty

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapters Seventy-Nine to Eighty



#### Chapter Seventy-Nine

Da Tian Ting carried the box to Feng Kai Ze's car. On the way home, she thought about what happened when she was sixteen.

That year, Da Tian Ting remembered on a stormy afternoon, she rushed home to see her father and her mother who she thought loved her.

Da Tian Ting pictured that day clearly. Outside her family home, there was a man holding an umbrella, and opening the door of flashy car for her mother and her father ran to the car.

'Xin Yu, I'm begging you not to leave me,' Da Zheng Li said.

Da Tian Ting's mother sat in the man's flashy car, and left her father kneeling and crying in the rain. Since that day she never saw her mother again.

Later Da Tian Ting found out her mother betrayed her father with another man. She hated and resented her mother because of her mother's betrayal and for abandoning her father and her. In her eyes, her mother was dead to her that day.

Feng Kai Ze was willing to wait for Da Tian Ting to confide in him about her past.

'Stop thinking about the painful past,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You should focus on living a happy life in the future.'

'I'm tired,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I only want to go home and sleep.'

Da Tian Ting had buried her mother in the past. The box in her hands reopened the wound caused by her mother's abandonment.

When Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze left her uncle's home, they didn't notice they drove past Shang Duan Hua's car. But Da Ming Sheng thought she saw a beautiful version of Da Tian Ting sitting in a Bugatti. Da Ming Sheng shook her head, it was her paranoia about Da Tian Ting stealing Shang Duan Hua from her that made her see things.

Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng returned to her family home, and they saw her parents fight.

'Dad, mum, why are you two fighting?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

Da Qing Feng and Ning Kan heard Da Ming Sheng's voice, and they stopped fighting.

'Duan Hua, you're here,' Ning Kan said.

'Hello aunty Ning, uncle Da,' Shang Duan Hua greeted. 'I wanted to make sure Ming Sheng return home safely.'

Shang Duan Hua was shocked to see Da Ming Sheng's home turned into a pig sty since his last visit a few days ago.

'I'll go get a glass of water,' Shang Duan Hua said politely.

Shang Duan Hua walked to the kitchen, and pretended he didn't care about the messy apartment.



Shang Duan Hua opened the fridge, there were no food or drinks inside the fridge and no water came out of the fridge dispenser.

Shang Duan Hua walked back to the messy living room.

‘Is the fridge broken?’ Shang Duan Hua asked. ‘No water came out of the fridge dispenser. How come there are no food or drinks in the fridge?’

‘Because Tian Ting doesn’t live here anymore,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Tian Ting, always buy the groceries including bottled water. Since she moved out, the people living here don’t know how to buy groceries and pay the water bill for themselves.’

Da Qing Feng picked up a newspaper, and ignored the foolish Shang Duan Hua. Shang Duan Hua took Da Tian Ting for granted. He knew Shang Duan Hua would regret marrying Da Ming Sheng who was self-centered like Shang Duan Hua.

Ning Kan and Da Ming Sheng gave Da Qing Feng daggers.

‘Stop saying nonsense,’ Ning Kan said.

‘I’ve only said the truth,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘In the past Da Tian Ting did everything for this family. Now that she’s gone, this home is falling apart.’

‘Shut up!’ Ning Kan said.

‘Duan Hua, I’m sorry,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I’ve been busy with the wedding, and forgot to buy groceries. Tomorrow I’ll buy groceries.’

‘Duan Hua, stay for dinner,’ Ning Kan said. ‘I’ll go bring the dinner dishes out.’

Ning Kan ran to the kitchen so Shang Duan Hua couldn’t decline her dinner invitation.

‘People who take another person for granted will regret after that person is gone,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Dad, don’t say something to make Duan Hua laugh at us,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘You and he are the embarrassments,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Dad!’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Ming Sheng, Tian Ting came here earlier,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Do you know what your mum said?’

‘Why did big sister come here?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

Da Ming Sheng didn’t want to believe the beautiful woman in the Bugatti was Da Tian Ting.

‘Uncle, why did Tian Ting come here?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

‘Tian Ting’s father prepared a wedding gift for her before he died,’ Da Qing Fang said. ‘Since you and Ming Sheng betrayed Tian Ting, I gave Tian Ting’s wedding gift to her. I’m happy Tian Ting brought her boyfriend here. Tian Ting has turned into a beautiful woman, and her boyfriend loves her. Her boyfriend is caring, handsome and a better man than you. Ming Sheng’s mum shamelessly scold Tian Ting. Lucky Tian Ting has a good boyfriend, and protected her. Good men are rare these days.’

‘Dad, stop talking!’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Duan Hua, thank you for leaving Tian Ting,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Tian Ting is living a happy life with her loving boyfriend.’

Shang Duan Hua was angry a vicious woman like Da Tian Ting found a boyfriend.

‘Duan Hua, my dad is only saying nonsense because he’s angry that we wronged big sister,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Ming Sheng, I understand,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘Uncle, you shouldn’t trust a two faced person like Tian Ting. Tian Ting assaulted Ming Sheng. First Tian Ting poured hot water onto Ming Sheng’s arm at my parents’ home. Then she threw hot coffee onto Ming Sheng’s body at a restaurant.’

‘I’ll never believe Tian Ting would do something to hurt another person,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Uncle, how can you believe another person’s daughter over your own daughter?’ Shang Duan Hua asked. ‘Uncle, don’t you care about Ming Sheng?’

Da Qing Feng didn’t say anything, because he knew one day the truth would come out.

Da Ming Sheng was happy Shang Duan Hua believed her lies. It meant their wedding day would happen as scheduled.

‘Duan Hua, my dad will accept our marriage soon,’ Da Ming Sheng assured.

Da Qing Feng was ashamed he had a two faced daughter. But he couldn’t change the truth, Da Ming Sheng was his daughter.

‘Uncle, it’s late,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘I’m going home. Bye uncle.’

Shang Duan Hua stood, and left the apartment because he didn’t want to listen to Da Qing Feng’s insults.

‘Dad, I know big sister is a good person,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘But I’m your daughter. I’m asking you not to destroy my happiness.’

‘Ming Sheng, listen to me,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Don’t marry Shang Duan Hua. If you marry him then you’ll be making a mistake, and live an unhappy life.’

‘Dad!’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I know you don’t want me to marry Duan Hua so big sister can marry Duan Hua. Dad, I’m telling you now, I’m marrying Duan Hua!’

‘You’re going to regret marrying him,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘I’ll regret if I don’t marry Duan Hua!’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng stood, stomped to her bedroom and tripped over a garbage bag.

‘Don’t people know how to throw out the garbage in this home?’ Da Ming Sheng asked. ‘Look how messy this home is. Why didn’t anyone clean this home?’

‘Your big sister used to do the housework here,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Now that she’s gone, if you don’t want to live in a messy home then move your arms and legs to clean! And your monthly allowance is used to pay bills. If you’re hungry, go beg for food on the streets.’

‘Dad, why did you use my monthly allowance to pay bills?’ Da Ming Sheng asked. ‘Dad, am I your daughter or is big sister your daughter?’

‘You’ve graduated for three years and still living off me,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Aren’t you embarrassed? I only make enough money each month to support the family. Now that your big sister is gone, there is no one to share the financial burden with me. So you can forget about getting a monthly allowance from me

to pamper yourself.'

'Dad, how can you mistreat me like this?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

'Tian Ting, sacrificed half of her monthly pay each month for this family,' Da Qing Feng said. 'Tian Ting worked to help support this family, and did the housework. How did you and your mum repay Tian Ting? You stole Tian Ting's fiancé. Then you and your mum ganged up on Tian Ting.'

Da Ming Sheng thought she owed Da Tian Ting nothing. After she married Shang Duan Hua, she didn't need to live off her dad or worry about money.

'Dad, I don't want to listen to you nag,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'I'm going to my room.'

Da Qing Feng felt that he had a bad daughter like Da Ming Sheng, because he broke his promise to Da Zheng Li and didn't take good care of Da Tian Ting.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Eighty**

Feng Kai Ze drove Da Tian Ting home. She didn't know what to do with the box. She wanted to throw it out, but half of it belonged to her father.

Da Tian Ting put the box in a drawer. She took off the uncomfortable heels and dress. Then she showered, and returned to her usual country bumpkin self.

At seven o'clock in the evening, Da Tian Ting lay in bed and received a text message from Shang Duan Hua, 'Meet me at the same restaurant at nine tonight.'

It was the first time Shang Duan Hua asked to meet Da Tian Ting alone. What did he want? She couldn't sleep, because she was curious what he was scheming.

Da Tian Ting changed into a T-shirt and jeans. She didn't brush her hair, and took the bus to the restaurant.

At nine o'clock at night, the restaurant was packed. Da Tian Ting remembered every time she made plans to go out with Shang Duan Hua, he would either show up hours later or stood her up.

Da Tian Ting sat at a table. She drank half a cup of tea while she waited an hour for Shang Duan Hua to show up. She laughed at herself for agreeing to meet him and turning up on time, because of one text message from him. When she stood to leave, he showed up.

Shang Duan Hua picked up the cup of tea from the table and threw it at Da Tian Ting's face.

'Da Tian Ting, this is payback for what you did to Ming Sheng,' Shang Duan Hua said.

The customers stopped chatting, and looked at Da Tian Ting and Shang Duan Hua's direction.

Da Tian Ting waited for the tea to drip down her face before she opened her eyes.

'Shang Duan Hua, you have no right to insult me and throw tea at my face,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting had agreed to meet Shang Duan Hua because she thought he would apologise for betraying her, and it would give her closure.

'I'm Ming Sheng's fiancée,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'Since you keep following Ming Sheng around to assault her, I want to give you a taste.'

'When did I follow her around?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Stop acting innocent,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'You visited Ming Sheng's home today. It's a good thing Ming Sheng was out with me. Who knows what you would have done to Ming Sheng if she was home.'

'My uncle asked me to come to his home to get something that belonged to me,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Ming Sheng wasn't home, I didn't do anything to her.'

'You went to Ming Sheng's home to destroy Ming Sheng and her father's bond,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'You make me sick.'

'Shang Duan Hua, don't accuse me of something I didn't do,' Da Tian Ting said. 'What evidence do you have to prove I tried to destroy hers and my uncle's bond?'

'The truth speaks for itself,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'I don't need evidence.'

‘You’re right,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘No one needs evidence to see the truth that you’re a brainless AH.’

‘Do you know how much everyone hates the tactless way you speak and act?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

‘Shang Duan Hua that is something you should say to yourself,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You’re a lowlife man. I’m embarrassed I used to be your fiancée.’

‘I came here today to warn you to stay away from Ming Sheng,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘If you hurt Ming Sheng again or destroy her bond with her father then you’ll have me to deal with.’

‘I told you, I have done nothing to hurt Ming Sheng,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t care if you believe me or not.’

‘Ming Sheng’s father must be blind,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘He can’t see the real you. Uncle said you brought your boyfriend to see him. Why isn’t your imaginary boyfriend here with you? Uncle said that you’ve become a beautiful woman. What beauty? You’re still ugly like the day I met you.’

‘My boyfriend is real and a better man than you,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I didn’t bring my boyfriend here because I didn’t want him to misunderstand I still care about my vile ex-fiance. I only want to look beautiful for my boyfriend. You’re not worthy to see my beauty. I’m embarrassed to be seen in public with you.’

‘You can look forward to a miserable lonely future,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘On your wedding day, you’ll see what a happy future I have with my boyfriend,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting grabbed a glass of wine from the table next to her table, and threw it at Shang Duan Hua’s face.

‘Da Tian Ting!’ Shang Duan Hua called.

‘This is payback for the cup of tea you threw at my face earlier,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting walked to the couple sitting at the table next to her table, and reimbursed them one hundred dollars.

‘I’m sorry for wasting your glass of wine on a worthless man’s face,’ Da Tian

Ting said.

Shang Duan Hua glared at Da Tian Ting's back until she walked out the door. He was lucky he didn't marry a vicious shrew like Da Tian Ting.

Outside the restaurant, Da Tian Ting walked toward a taxi. A familiar car stopped on the road beside her.

'It's me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Hop in. I'll take you home.'

Feng Kai Ze opened the passenger door for Da Tian Ting, and she sat in his car.

Feng Kai Ze drove Da Tian Ting home. He didn't need to ask her what happened. He had followed her to the restaurant, because he was worried she would do something foolish after her confrontation with Ning Kan. When he saw her meet Shang Duan Hua at the restaurant he wanted to drag her home. But he was glad he didn't after he got to witness her fighting with Shang Duan Hua, and throwing wine at Shang Duan Hua's face. It meant she didn't have any feelings toward Shang Duan Hua.

'How did you know I was at the restaurant?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'I followed you to the restaurant,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'You followed me?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Yes,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I was worried someone would take my future wife away from me so I followed you.'

'Thank you,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I don't want you to thank me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I want you to give me your heart, and marry me.'

Da Tian Ting chose selective hearing.

'I want you to help me,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Of course I'll help my future wife,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I'll make them regret hurting you on their wedding day.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Seventy-Nine to Eighty

# Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 21, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)



## UVB – Chapter Eighty-One

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Eighty-One



Since the day Da Qing Feng gave the box to Da Tian Ting, she disappeared without a trace. He called her phone to ask her if she was coping living on her own, but her phone was switched off. He went to visit her at Tian Chen's company, and found out she lost her job.

In contrast, Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng were busy preparing for their wedding day. He asked her if Da Tian Ting contacted her or visited her home, she said Da Tian Ting didn't contact her since Da Tian Ting's last visit to her family home. He should be happy Da Tian Ting was out of his life, but he felt like he lost something.

'Duan Hua, today is your wedding day,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'You shouldn't look gloomy. You need to smile.'

'Mum, I'm just nervous,' Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Duan Hua told himself not to think about Da Tian Ting on his wedding day with Da Ming Sheng.

'Duan Hua, you're a thirty-year-old man,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'You need to

toughen up.'

'Mum, it doesn't matter how old I am,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'This is my first time being a groom. It's normal for me to be nervous.'

'Since you're the groom, smile for your wedding guests,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Yes mum,' Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Ming was preoccupied on the phone, which made Lam Shu Pan frustrated.

'Shang Ming, today is our son's wedding,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Business can wait, and stop frowning.'

'It's not business,' Shang Ming said. 'Tian Ting's phone is still switched off. I'm worried something happened to her.'

'Shang Ming, if you mention Da Tian Ting's name again then don't come to the wedding,' Lam Shu Pan warned.

'Today is meant to be Tian Ting and Duan Hua's wedding day,' Shang Ming said. 'Ask yourselves why it turned into Ming Sheng and Duan Hua's wedding day. And ask yourselves if you have a conscience. Tian Ting lost everything, her family, her fiancé and her job. She sacrificed her youth for this family. Do you still want me to smile?'

'Tian Ting is hurting but she's not your daughter,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Today is your son's wedding day. If you care about your son, smile on his wedding day.'

Shang Duan Hua regretted what he did to Da Tian Ting at the restaurant. But his wedding day with Da Ming Sheng was more important than finding Da Tian Ting.

'Dad, after my wedding with Ming Sheng, I'll go look for Tian Ting,' Shang Duan Hua said.

'You should go to your wedding ceremony,' Shang Ming said. 'It's not good for the groom to be late.'

Shang Ming forgave Da Tian Ting for pouring hot water on Da Ming Sheng's arm, because he believed if Da Ming Sheng and Shang Duan Hua didn't betray Da Tian Ting, she wouldn't have done what she did. He regretted the harsh words

he said to Da Tian Ting that day.

‘Duan Hua, forget about your dad,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Focus on being the happy groom.’

‘Yes mum,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

On the bride’s side, Da Ming Sheng woke up early to have her makeup done and hair styled. She had waited for a long time to be Mrs Shang. What made her happier was Da Tian Ting staying out of their lives.

‘Ming Sheng, are you ready?’ Ning Kan asked. ‘The bridal car will be here soon.’

Ning Kan was proud of Da Ming Sheng marrying a rich man. She had dreamt of having a rich son-in-law since Da Ming Sheng was born.

‘Mum, I’m ready,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘My daughter is the most beautiful bride in the world,’ Ning Kan said.

‘Mum...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘You don’t need to be humble,’ Ning Kan said.

‘Mum, where’s dad?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘Don’t mention him,’ Ning Kan said.

‘Mum, is dad still out looking for big sister?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

Da Ming Sheng resented Da Tian Ting for stealing her father’s love. Her father spent the last few days looking for Da Tian Ting instead of helping her prepare for her wedding.

‘Ming Sheng, forget him,’ Ning Kan said. ‘He doesn’t care about you. But I care about you. Today is your wedding day, you should think happy thoughts.’

‘Yes mum,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Mum, dad’s here.’

‘Da Qing Feng, today is your daughter’s wedding,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Don’t let me see your gloomy face.’

Da Qing Feng ignored Ning Kan.

‘Ming Sheng, this is your last chance to back out,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Do you

really want to marry Shang Duan Hua?’

‘Dad!’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Ming Sheng, I have a duty as a father to protect you,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘I want you to marry the right man who will make you happy. Listen to me, Shang Duan Hua is the wrong man. He’ll only make your life miserable.’

‘Dad, I’m marrying Duan Hua,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Dad, can’t you wish me happiness?’

Da Qing Feng could only let Da Ming Sheng make a big mistake.

‘Ming Sheng, I wish you happiness,’ Da Qing Feng said.

Da Ming Sheng hugged Da Qing Feng.

‘Thank you dad,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Qing Feng escorted Da Ming Sheng to the bridal car.

Outside the CBD, Da Tian Ting woke up at midday. The past few days, Feng Kai Ze organised facials, manicures, pedicures, etiquette and dance lessons.

Feng Kai Ze brought a team of makeup artists and hair stylists to Da Tian Ting’s apartment.

‘Tian Ting, you need to get a wiggle on,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If you don’t get ready now, you’ll be late.’

‘Mr Feng, I’m too tired to learn anything today,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I don’t have any lessons planned for you today,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Then why did you bring instructors here?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘They’re not instructors,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘They’re here to do your hair and makeup.’

‘Huh?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Today is Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng’s wedding day,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘What?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

The various lessons crammed into the last few days made Da Tian Ting lost track of time.

‘How could I forget?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Mr Feng, ask them to help me prepare for the wedding pronto. I don’t want to miss out on the wedding.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eighty-One

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 21, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Eighty-Two

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



# You Again

### Chapter Eighty-Two



Shang Duan Hua stood at the altar with the priest. The church was full, but he didn't see any signs of Da Tian Ting. He knew Da Tian Ting was bluffing. Of course she couldn't attend the wedding with her imaginary boyfriend.

The musicians played the wedding march music. Da Qing Feng escorted Da Ming Sheng up the aisle.

Da Qing Feng asked Shang Duan Hua one last time if he wanted to marry Da Ming Sheng.

'Shang Duan Hua, can you promise me that you'll make my daughter happy?' Da Qing Feng asked.

Da Qing Feng didn't need to hear Shang Duan Hua's answer to predict what would happen in the future. A man who betrayed a loving fiancée wasn't capable of being a faithful husband.

Shang Duan Hua looked at his beautiful bride and smiled.

‘Dad, I promise I’ll make Ming Sheng happy,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

Da Qing Feng reluctantly handed Da Ming Sheng over to Shang Duan Hua.

‘I hope you’ll keep your promise today,’ Da Qing Feng said.

Da Qing Feng walked to the seat next to Ning Kan, and sat gloomily.

‘Put on a happy face,’ Ning Kan said.

Da Qing Feng put on a fake smile.

Shang Ming was on the same page as Da Qing Feng, he felt their children’s marriage was doomed to fail.

The wedding guests forced themselves to congratulate the bride and groom, because they betrayed the bride’s cousin.

The wedding guests listened attentively to Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng exchange vows.

‘The groom and bride can now exchange rings,’ the priest said.

After Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng exchanged their wedding rings, Feng Kai Ze escorted Da Tian Ting into the church.

The wedding guests’ eyes dropped out of their eye sockets. Da Tian Ting wore a knee length white dress. She outshone the bride because she looked beautiful and gave off a pure aura that the bride lacked.

Da Tian Ting’s heels were white, her jade bracelet was white and a white ribbon was used to part her long hair to the side. The wedding guests thought the groom chose the wrong bride. If they were in the groom’s shoes, they would have chosen Da Tian Ting.

Feng Kai Ze wore an ordinary suit, because he wanted Da Tian Ting to be the main attraction. But the wedding guests all agreed that Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting were the star attractions instead of the bride and groom.

Da Qing Feng had to do a double take to recognise his niece. His niece looked more beautiful than that day she introduced her boyfriend to him.

Ning Kan was envious of Da Tian Ting’s beauty. She couldn’t believe an ugly

duckling like Da Tian Ting could transform into a heavenly beauty.

Shang Ming was happy to see Da Tian Ting was alive and healthy. He was right about his son choosing the wrong bride.

Lam Shu Pan wasn't deceived by Da Tian Ting's beauty. She knew Da Tian Ting outshone her daughter-in-law for revenge.

Shang Duan Hua was angry Da Tian Ting never showed him her true beauty. Da Tian Ting looked a thousand times more beautiful than Da Ming Sheng in the white dress and light makeup. Da Tian Ting's smile was hypnotizing like moonlight. The man accompanying Da Tian Ting wasn't her imaginary boyfriend, but a distinguished handsome man.

Da Ming Sheng was jealous of Da Tian Ting's beauty. She hated Da Tian Ting for ruining her wedding day by looking more beautiful than her. She was the bride, not Da Tian Ting. She could spot a rich man from a mile away. Where did Da Tian Ting find a richer and better looking man than Shang Duan Hua?

Feng Kai Ze walked together with Da Tian Ting toward the bride and groom.

'I'm sorry I'm late,' Da Tian Ting said in an angelic voice. 'I wish both of you happiness.'

Shang Duan Hua thought Da Tian Ting looked even more beautiful up close.

'Tian...' Shang Duan Hua said.

'Big sister, what are you doing here?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

'Ming Sheng, have you forgotten my promise?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'I promised I would bring my boyfriend to attend yours and Duan Hua's wedding day and wish you two happiness.'

'Big sister, if you're here to wish me happiness, why are you wearing a white dress and looking more beautiful than me?' Da Ming Sheng asked. 'Big sister, why did you come here to ruin my wedding day?'

Shang Duan Hua was taken back by Da Ming Sheng's tone of voice. It was the first time he heard Da Ming Sheng spoke like a shrew. Was Da Ming Sheng's gentleness an act?

Da Tian Ting turned to Feng Kai Ze, and acted worried.



‘Kai Ze, did I wear the wrong dress?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Tian Ting, you’re wearing an appropriate dress,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I helped you wear your dress myself. You look beautiful.’

‘Kai Ze, I meant if I’m breaking the rules by wearing a white dress,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tian Ting, you don’t need to follow another person’s rules,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If I say you’re wearing the right dress then you’re wearing the right dress.’

Da Ming Sheng hated Da Tian Ting for finding a better man than Shang Duan Hua. She wished Da Tian Ting didn’t exist in the world, because she was meant to be the most beautiful bride in the world on her wedding day, not Da Tian Ting.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eighty-Two

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 21, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Eighty-Three

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Eighty-Three



Ning Kan snapped out of her awe of Da Tian Ting's beauty. She noticed Da Ming Sheng was going to explode if she didn't divert everyone's attention.

'It's time for the groom to kiss the bride,' Ning Kan said.

The wedding guests chimed in too.

'Kiss the bride,' the wedding guests said.

The wedding guests' voices brought Shang Duan Hua's senses back. He didn't know why he couldn't look away from Da Tian Ting earlier. He turned around and faced Da Ming Sheng. Suddenly he regretted marrying Da Ming Sheng.

'Tian Ting, why did you come here?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

'Revenge,' Da Tian Ting said.

‘You!’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Why are you here to ruin Duan Hua and Ming Sheng’s happiness? If you can’t see they truly love each other then I’ll ask the security guards to escort you outside.’

‘Auntie Lam, I said I came here for revenge,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I didn’t say I want to separate Duan Hua and Ming Sheng. I do truly wish them happiness like how they truly love each other.’

‘What do you want?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘Auntie Lam, what do you think I want?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Tian Ting, Duan Hua was wrong to leave you for Ming Sheng,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘I hope you can understand that love can’t be forced.’

Da Tian Ting turned to Shang Duan Hua, and spoke from her heart.

‘Shang Duan Hua, for ten years you accused me of not having a feminine bone in my body,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You left me because you couldn’t stand being with an ugly person. Thank you for leaving me, and giving me the chance to experience true love and happiness. Someone shallow like you who only care about appearances, isn’t worthy of receiving my love. Looks fade. I’m grateful I didn’t marry you, because you’ll leave your wife after her looks are gone.’

‘You!’ Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Duan Hua told himself not to be fooled by Da Tian Ting’s transformation, because underneath was a shrew.

‘Da Tian Ting!’ Lam Shu Pan called. ‘Don’t you know how to live with a conscience?’

‘Auntie Lam, if I didn’t have a conscience, Duan Hua and Ming Sheng’s wedding ceremony wouldn’t have ran as smoothly,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Ask yourself who is the selfish one between us. Have you and your family thought about my feelings? Ask yourself how I took care of your family for ten years. Why did I waste my love on a man who isn’t worth a cent? I came here to take revenge. I want to show Duan Hua and Ming Sheng their love was built on betrayal and deceit. A marriage based on appearances is doomed to be an unhappy marriage.’

‘Why do you need to be bitter when Duan Hua always hated you?’ Lam Shu

Pan asked. 'Why can't you let go of the past? Don't you understand love is a two way street?'

'Auntie Lam, thank you for enlightening me,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I've found the man of my dreams. He loves me unconditionally, and we'll live a happy life together.'

Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting gazed lovingly into each other's eyes. The wedding guests thought they were seeing a real life prince and princess popped out of a fairy tale.

'Shu Pan, stop insulting Tian Ting,' Shang Ming said. 'It's Duan Hua and Ming Sheng who don't have a conscience. For ten years they had an affair behind Tian Ting's back. You have no right to insult Tian Ting.'

'Shang Ming, shut up!' Lam Shu Pan said.

'It's you who should shut up,' Shang Ming said. 'Stop embarrassing yourself.'

'Tian Ting, uncle is sorry Duan Hua and Ming Sheng hurt you,' Da Qing Feng said. 'Can you forgive them for me? They're husband and wife now, let them live their own lives.'

'Uncle, this isn't about forgiveness,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I do wish Duan Hua and Ming Sheng happiness. Since I'm an unwelcomed guest, I'll leave.'

'Done?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Yes,' Da Tian Ting said. 'From today, I have nothing to do with them. I'm starting a new life without them.'

'Good,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Now you have closure, and Shang Duan Hua is no longer in your heart. You and I only need to focus on us.'

'I, Da Tian Ting, solemnly swear that I've cast Shang Duan Hua out of my heart,' Da Tian Ting said. 'From today, Shang Duan Hua and I are strangers.'

'Tian Ting, I'll be happier if you swear you'll only love me for the rest of your life,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Hey,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Don't take advantage of the situation.'

Feng Kai Ze squeezed Da Tian Ting's nose.

‘It’s enough if you swear in your heart,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Let’s go.’

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s hand, and they left the church together.

The wedding guests couldn’t recover their initial joy of seeing the union of the bride and groom. Their minds were preoccupied by the prince and princess who left the church.

Shang Duan Hua felt like Da Tian Ting stomped all over his pride. But he couldn’t forget how beautiful Da Tian Ting looked on his wedding day.

‘Duan Hua, are you OK?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

Da Ming Sheng calmed down because she was Mrs Shang, and Da Tian Ting could do nothing to change her status.

‘Duan Hua, forget the crazy words of a bitter woman like Tian Ting,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘That’s right,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Forget about Tian Ting. Now you and Ming Sheng are husband and wife. You and Ming Sheng will live a happy life together.’

Da Ming Sheng and Shang Ming both thought their children would regret marrying each other.

Shang Duan Hua wanted to salvage a bit of pride.

‘Doesn’t everyone think my bride looks beautiful?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

‘Yes,’ the wedding guests agreed to disperse the tension.

Everyone congratulated the newlyweds, and didn’t notice Da Tian Ting’s mother who wore a designer dress and sat in a corner of the church since the start of the wedding ceremony. She witnessed how the Shang family mistreated her daughter. She discreetly walked outside the church, took off her sunglasses and called her second in command, ‘I want all the bank loans given to Shang’s company to be cancelled by the end of today.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eighty-Three

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## ***Related***

[November 21, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Eighty-Four

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



**I don't know where my home is**

### Chapter Eighty-Four



On the streets, Da Tian Ting didn't know where her home was. Her uncle's home and the Shang family's home were not her home. Why did her heart feel empty like she lost everything?

'Why the long face?' Feng Kai Ze asked. 'You were happy a moment ago.'

'I feel like I lost,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Don't you mean you won?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'I won one battle and lost the war,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I have no family, no home and I'm all alone. During the festive seasons I'll be celebrating on my own.'

Da Tian Ting held her head high, and didn't allow herself to cry even if she felt like she had no life purpose.

Feng Kai Ze hugged Da Tian Ting in the middle of a street.

'You have me,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting's diary, no it was her heart that helped him endure his lonely

existence in the last sixteen years.

Da Tian Ting moved out of Feng Kai Ze's embrace.

'It's not the same,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Remember you're not allowed to touch me without my permission.'

'Have you forgotten that you're my girlfriend?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Fake girlfriend,' Da Tian Ting said. 'The wedding's over and so is our fake relationship. Starting now, you go your way and I'll go my way.'

Da Tian Ting and her heavy heart walked away from Feng Kai Ze. He was the first person outside of her family that cared about her. But she knew he had a complicated identity, and she didn't fit in his world. Someone who could burn six figures like buying lunch wasn't a pauper.

Feng Kai Ze chased after Da Tian Ting, dragged her inside his car, drove off and stopped on the side of a remote road.

'Hey,' Da Tian Ting said. 'What are you doing?'

Inside the locked sound proof car, Da Tian Ting didn't want to disturb the tensed silence by breathing.

'Feng Kai Ze, tell me what you want from me,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I've told you what I want from you since the start,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Can you stop playing games?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'I know you're a rich boy who has a lot of time and money to spend on me. But I have no time and energy to play games with you. I'm asking you to find another woman to play games with.'

'I told you, I'm not playing games,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting didn't let herself fall into Feng Kai Ze's tempting trap.

'I'm asking you to let me go,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Even if you're not playing games with me, we won't work out.'

'Why not?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'We're from two different social worlds,' Da Tian Ting said.



Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's hand.

'Shang Duan Hua is considered an average rich boy,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'How come you can accept him, but you can't accept me?'

Feng Kai Ze didn't believe Da Tian Ting couldn't see his sincerity during the weeks they spent together.

'It's not the same,' Da Tian Ting said.

'It's not different,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Money is money. Why can't you accept me?'

'Right now, I'm drained,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Let's end on good terms. Believe me, we won't work out.'

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's shoulders so she couldn't avoid his eyes.

'Da Tian Ting, listen carefully,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Things we'll never be over between us. In this lifetime you'll be my only woman and wife. We belong together.'

After Shang Duan Hua's betrayal, Da Tian Ting believed it was true about once bitten twice shy. She was scared of loving Feng Kai Ze, because if he left her too then she didn't think she would recover from another person abandoning her.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's face.

'I'm sorry,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I didn't mean to scare you.'

Feng Kai Ze hugged Da Tian Ting.

'I'm begging you not to leave me,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting's diary wasn't enough. Feng Kai Ze needed Da Tian Ting in his life. He didn't know if he could face his future if he had to walk it alone without her.

Da Tian Ting heard Feng Kai Ze's desperate plea, it reminded her of her father's desperate plea that day. She let him hug her, but distance her heart from his heart because a pauper and a rich person wouldn't work out.

'Mr Feng, is it that hard for you to let go of me?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze let go of Da Tian Ting.

‘Letting go of you is like asking me to die,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting was Feng Kai Ze’s home. If Feng Kai Ze didn’t have her to come home to, he felt there was no purpose for him to be alive.

Da Tian Ting was scared of Feng Kai Ze’s live or die kind of love.

‘Tian Ting, is it that hard for you to accept me?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I don’t know,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting needed time to think about if she could afford to take another gamble.

‘I’ll wait for you to accept me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Yang Fei’s phone call interrupted Feng Kai Ze’s declaration.

‘Why did you call me?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Yang Fei hated being Feng Jia Yong’s messenger.

‘Tell that old man that I rather die than giving my consent,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting was worried why Feng Kai Ze tossed the phone in the backseat, and looked like he wanted to kill someone.

‘Hey,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘What happened? Why do you look like you want to kill someone?’

‘An irrelevant old man is pressuring me to do something that I rather die than do what the old man wants me to do,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Who?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘If you want to know, marry me and I’ll tell you who,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze always used the same trick whenever he wanted to avoid answering her questions.

‘I don’t want to know,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze smiled, and drove Da Tian Ting home.

At the Feng Mansion, Yang Fei hated being Feng Kai Ze’s messenger too.

‘Yang Fei, tell me what my son said,’ Feng Jia Young said.

‘Boss, your son said he rather die than marry Miss Hong,’ Yang Fei said.

‘Uncle, if Kai Ze doesn’t want to marry me then perhaps we shouldn’t force him,’ Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na wanted to marry Feng Kai Ze, but he wouldn’t agree to marry as long as that woman was in his life.

‘My son is marrying you,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Your father and I made a pact that my son will marry you.’

‘Uncle, Kai Ze has som...’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘I’m his father, I get to decide who he marries,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘My son and your wedding is scheduled for next month. I promise my son will exchange wedding vows with you next month.’

Feng Jia Yong’s promise reassured Hong Shi Na that in another month she would be Feng Kai Ze’s wife.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eighty-Four

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 21, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Eighty-Five

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Eighty-Five



Da Tian Ting job hunted unsuccessfully for several days.

‘Are you going out to look for another job?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Yes,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I need to find a job if I don’t want to eat a dust diet.’

Da Tian Ting carried her resume to the door, and remembered Feng Kai Ze’s car.

‘Are you free?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Why?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘If you have nothing to do, can you drive me around to help me look for a job?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Don’t waste your time and energy to find a job because you won’t find one,’

Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Hey!’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Just because you don’t want to come with me, you don’t need to jinx me!’

‘I’m just telling you the truth, you won’t find a job,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze knew no company would dare oppose Feng’s company and hire his fierce apple.

‘Today I’m going to find a job and when I come home I’ll show you what happens when you underestimate me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting walked optimistically out the door.

When Feng Kai Ze was about to chase after Da Tian Ting, he received a phone call from Yang Fei. He didn’t want anything to do with his father, but he needed to keep his enemies close.

‘I’ll be there,’ Feng Kai Ze said and hung up the phone.

Da Tian Ting took the bus to the city. She was upset to see Feng Kai Ze drive toward the city too.

‘Liar,’ Da Tian Ting said under her breath. ‘Feng Kai Ze, will it kill you to drive me around to look for a job? What pursuit? If I believe you again, my family name isn’t Da!’

Feng Kai Ze drove straight to the Feng Mansion, and waltzed to the living room to see his father.

‘What’s the emergency?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Dai Fang Dung stopped Feng Jia Yong from hitting Feng Kai Ze again.

‘Kai Ze, you’re home,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘Sit down with us.’

‘Tell me what the emergency is,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If it’s about me marrying your guest, I’m leaving.’

Hong Shi Na teared up because her fiance saw her as a guest.

‘Feng Kai Ze, your marriage to Shi Na is set,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘What right do you have to tell me who to marry?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Because I’m your father,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘Too bad you’re not my mother,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If you’re my mother, I would listen to you. But you’re a father in name only. You’ve never been a dutiful father toward me.’

‘Feng Kai Ze!’ Feng Jia Yong warned.

‘I don’t have time to waste talking nonsense with you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m leaving.’

Feng Kai Ze walked toward the door.

‘Come back here!’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘Jia Yong, don’t fight with Kai Ze,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘Don’t you know how to talk to Kai Ze like an adult?’

‘Fang Dung, look at my son,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Does it look like I can talk to him like an adult?’

‘If you don’t try once, how do you know you can’t?’ Dai Fang Dung asked.

‘Kai Ze, Hong’s company becoming a subsidiary of Feng’s company will be profitable for both companies,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Why don’t you consider the benefits of marrying Shi Na?’

Feng Kai Ze stood still, and turned around to face his father.

‘I’m not going to marry someone for the sake of pedigree,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m only marrying someone I love, even if she’s a country bumpkin. If the Jade Emperor appeared in front of me right now and offered me his daughter, I would reject her too because I don’t love his daughter.’

Feng Kai Ze saw straight through Hong Shi Na’s fake gentle facade. Da Tian Ting was going to be his only wife in his life.

Hong Shi Na dug her fingernails into her palms. She didn’t care if Feng Kai Ze turned into a poor man, he had to marry her.

‘Feng Kai Ze!’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘You’re marrying Shi Na!’

‘Even if your guest is the only woman left in the world, I still wouldn’t marry her,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You!’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘You don’t need to you me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You know what I’m like. If it’s something I don’t want to do, no one can force me to do something I don’t want to do.’

‘If you don’t marry Shi Na, I’m cutting ties with you,’ Feng Jia Yong bluffed.

‘Good,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You should ask Yang Fei to call a press conference right now, and publicly announce we’re no longer father and son.’

‘Do you think you can succeed without Feng’s company’s backing?’ Feng Jia Yong asked.

‘Let’s see between us, who falls first,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If you don’t want to ask Yang Fei, I’ll ask Yang Fei myself. Yang Fei, go and call a press conference right now. Tell them to spread the good news, Feng Jia Yong wants to cut ties with his son.’

‘Young master Fei...’ Yang Fei said.

Yang Fei was stuck between Feng Jia Yong and Feng Kai Ze. One man was his boss, and the other man was his future boss. He couldn’t offend either man.

‘Feng Kai Ze!’ Feng Jia Yong called.

‘I’m leaving,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘In the future only call me if there’s a real emergency. I don’t want to waste my time listening to nonsense or looking at dusty guests. Don’t let me see another dusty guest again.’

‘You!’ Feng Jia Yong said.

Feng Kai Ze walked out of the door. Feng Jia Yong was running out of time, he needed to find Feng Kai Ze’s weakness to threaten him to marry Hong Shi Na. Too much was at stake if Feng Kai Ze didn’t marry Hong Shi Na.

‘Jia Yong, Kai Ze wasn’t bluffing,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘Kai Ze will cut ties with you if you force him to marry Shi Na.’

Hong Shi Na resented Dai Fang Dung for taking Feng Kai Ze’s side. She was going to marry Feng Kai Ze, and no one was going to get in her way. She’d be a laughing stock if people found about her fiancé jilted her at the altar.

‘The wedding is set for next month,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Feng Kai Ze will be standing at the altar next to Shi Na on their wedding day.’

‘Fang Dung, even if you tie Kai Ze up at the altar, he won’t marry Shi Na,’ Dai Fang Dung said.

‘I’ll make him agree to marry Shi Na,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘Jia Yong, what are you planning?’ Dai Fang Dung asked.

Dai Fang Dung knew Feng Jia Yong was capable of using ruthless methods toward anyone to get what he wanted, including his son.

‘You only need to worry about preparing the wedding,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘Uncle, are you certain Kai Ze will marry me next month?’ Hong Shi Na asked.

‘I’m one hundred percent certain Feng Kai Ze will marry you next month,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Yang Fei, you know where Feng Kai Ze is living. Give Shi Na the address so she can strengthen her bond with Feng Kai Ze.’

Yang Fei was stuck between two hard rocks. Whether he gave Feng Kai Ze’s address or not, he would suffer.

‘Yang Fei, did you hear me?’ Feng Jia Yong asked.

‘Yes boss,’ Yang Fei said.

Yang Fei prepared himself to be killed by his future boss.

Hong Shi Na accepted Feng Kai Ze’s address from Yang Fei. She was going to make Feng Kai Ze fall in love with her before their wedding day.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eighty-Five

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)



- 

***Related***

[November 22, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

### UVB – Chapters Eighty-Six to Eighty-Seven

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



#### Chapters Eighty-Six to Eighty-Seven



#### Chapter Eighty-Six

Da Tian Ting arrived home at seven o'clock in the evening. She didn't find a job. She suspected foul play, because the companies who interviewed her said that she was qualified but they couldn't hire her.

Da Tian Ting's stomach rumbled. Since she left her uncle's home, Feng Kai Ze bought her three meals a day so she didn't need to worry about her stomach. It felt strange not seeing Feng Kai Ze after breakfast. She reminded herself she needed to be independent, and not rely on another person, especially Feng Kai Ze.

Da Tian Ting cooked herself a dinner.

'Smells yummy,' Da Tian Ting praised herself.

Da Tian Ting heard someone unlocked the front door, she didn't need to look up from her dinner bowl to know it was Feng Kai Ze because he had a key to her apartment.

‘Why are you eating dinner this late?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I’m eating dinner now,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting picked up her chopsticks, and acted like she didn’t miss Feng Kai Ze. She didn’t want to admit, not seeing him even for a day made her missed him.

‘You need to eat three meals a day on time so you don’t get a stomach ache,’ Feng Kai Ze nagged.

Feng Kai Ze was gone for one day, and his fierce apple skipped meals.

‘I just got home,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze sat next to Da Tian Ting at the dining table.

‘Let me guess, you didn’t find a job today either,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘The companies you applied for, took one look at your resume and turned you down.’

Da Tian Ting had a revelation, and put her chopsticks down.

‘Feng Kai Ze, are you the reason why I can’t find a job?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting crossed her arms.

‘Why?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘How am I supposed to make a living if you stop me from getting a job?’

‘Because I want you to spend most of every day with me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

\*\*\*

## **Chapter Eighty-Seven**

Da Tian Ting kicked Feng Kai Ze out of her apartment.

Feng Kai Ze walked back to his apartment smiling. His smile turned into a grimace after he saw Hong Shi Na sitting in his living room.

Feng Kai Ze walked to the sofa and pulled Hong Shi Na’s arm.

‘Get out of my home right now!’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Hong Shi Na held onto the sofa arm.

‘Kai Ze, you’re hurting me,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘Remember, you don’t have permission to call my name,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Do you want to leave on your own or do you want me to make you leave?’

‘Kai Ze, I...’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘I’m counting to three, if you don’t leave in three seconds, I’ll toss you out,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Listen to me...’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘One,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Hong Shi Na didn’t want to leave.

‘Two,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Hong Shi Na didn’t know what to do to convince Feng Kai Ze to let her stay.

‘Three,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Hong Shi Na stood up from the sofa. She saw Da Tian Ting holding a bowl of food at the front door so she hugged Feng Kai Ze and kissed his chin, because from Da Tian Ting’s angle, it would look like he kissed her lips.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t expect Hong Shi Na to throw herself at him. He was about to push her off him, but Da Tian Ting’s voice paralyzed him.

‘I’m sorry,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I didn’t ring the bell because the door’s unlocked. I’m sorry for interrupting. I’ll leave, and give you two privacy.’

Da Tian Ting carried the hot bowl of combination noodles she made for Feng Kai Ze back to her apartment. After thinking over things carefully, she had decided to take a gamble on Feng Kai Ze. She thought it didn’t matter if he was rich or poor as long as he cared about her. So she made him dinner to thank him for taking care of her during the toughest time of her life, and to tell him that she wanted to give them a chance to be together.

Da Tian Ting sat against the front door, and put the bowl on the floor. She didn’t expect to see Feng Kai Ze kissing another woman in his apartment. Why did she believe him when he was only playing with her feelings? Why did he lie to her and said he wanted her to be his wife? Why did his lies hurt more than Shang

Duan Hua's betrayal?

Da Tian Ting cried on her knees, and told herself to stop crying because of Feng Kai Ze's lies. She and Feng Kai Ze were strangers, it didn't matter who he kissed.

Da Tian Ting wiped her tears, picked up the bowl and ate the combination noodles. A liar like Feng Kai Ze didn't deserve to eat the food she cooked.

In Feng Kai Ze's apartment, he pushed Hong Shi Na off him. She held onto his waist to stop him from chasing after Da Tian Ting.

'Let go of my waist!' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Kai Ze, give us one chance,' Hong Shi Na said.

'Hong Shi Na, if you don't let go of my waist right now, I'll make you suffer!' Feng Kai Ze warned.

'Kai Ze, all I'm asking for is one chance,' Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na didn't want to let go of Feng Kai Ze, because she didn't want him to explain the truth to Da Tian Ting. Her mother taught her a way for a woman to hold onto a man's heart, the woman needed to have thick skin.

'Hong Shi Na, this is your last chance to let go of me!' Feng Kai Ze said.

'I'm not letting go of you,' Hong Shi Na said. 'Kai Ze, I love you. I loved you since the first day I met when I was a little girl. Kai Ze, give me a chance.'

'Hong Shi Na, don't make me laugh,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'How can you say you love me when you know nothing about me? If you knew me, you would know I hate people touching me without my permission.'

Feng Kai Ze gripped Hong Shi Na's wrist.

'Ah... you're hurting me,' Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na let go of Feng Kai Ze's waist.

'It's good you can feel pain and scared of dying,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze pushed Hong Shi Na off him, and she sat on the sofa again.

'Kai Ze, I'm not letting go of you,' Hong Shi Na said. 'You're going to marry me next month.'

Hong Shi Na always got everything she wanted, Feng Kai Ze wasn't going to be an exception. She wasn't going to lose him to a country bumpkin.

'You'll never have the chance in your life to be my wife,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze thought if Hong Shi Na wasn't Hong Shi's company's heiress, she would be exactly like all the other scheming gold diggers.

'Why are you rejecting me without giving me a chance?' Hong Shi Na asked.

'Some people don't deserve a chance,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'I deserve a chance,' Hong Shi Na said.

'You don't deserve a chance,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Hong Shi Na, this is my last warning. Don't appear in front of me again or I'll make you regret you exist.'

'Today I'm staying here,' Hong Shi Na said. 'You can't do anything to make me leave.'

'Who would expect Hong Shi's company's gentle princess is actually no different from a street worker?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'I don't care what you say, I'm not leaving,' Hong Shi Na said. 'Besides, there is nothing wrong about me staying inside my fiancé's home.'

Feng Kai Ze gripped Hong Shi Na's wrist again, and pulled her outside his apartment.

'Hong Shi Na, get it into your head, I'm not your fiancé!' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze closed the front door.

'Kai Ze, I'm going to stand outside your home and wait for you,' Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na wasn't going to let Feng Kai Ze explain the truth to Da Tian Ting. She called Hong Shi Chi to come help her.

Inside Feng Kai Ze's apartment, he called Da Tian Ting's phone to explain instead of going to Da Tian Ting's apartment because Hong Shi Na was outside.

Feng Kai Ze called Da Tian Ting's phone countless times, but she didn't answer his call. He hated Hong Shi Na, it was Hong Shi Na's fault for causing Da Tian Ting to misunderstand him.

In Da Tian Ting's apartment, she cleaned the empty bowl and witnessed Feng Kai Ze kicked Hong Shi Na outside his apartment but Hong Shi Na refused to go home. He called her phone many times. She didn't pick up and switched off her phone. If he wanted to explain to her, there was no reason why he didn't explain to her in person since he lived across from her apartment and had a key to her apartment. It meant he was a player. He got a thrill out of playing with women's feelings. He fooled her once, she wasn't going to be fooled by him a second time.

Da Tian Ting packed her belongings into a suitcase, including the box. She was going back to her father's hometown where Feng Kai Ze couldn't find her.

Da Tian Ting put all of the clothes, bags, jewellery, makeup and shoes Feng Kai Ze bought her on the dining table. Then she left a note for him, 'I'm giving back your belongings.'

Da Tian Ting picked up the packed suitcase, she went to return the apartment key to her former landlord and left the apartment building.

\*\*\*

End of Chapters Eighty-Six to Eighty-Seven

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 22, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Eighty-Eight

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Eighty-Eight



Da Tian Ting didn't greet Hong Shi Na on the way out.

Hong Shi Na smiled smugly to see Da Tian Ting leave. She was a princess, a country bumpkin like Da Tian Ting was no match for her.

Outside the apartment building, Hong Shi Chi recognised Da Tian Ting.

'Miss, do you need help carrying your suitcase?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

'No thank you,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting couldn't believe bad men were everywhere. She carried the suitcase around Hong Shi Chi.

Hong Shi Chi walked in front of Da Tian Ting, and obstructed her way.

'Miss, you ate the lunch that I paid but why are you scared to see me?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

'Sir, you paid for the lunch, no one asked you to pay,' Da Tian Ting said.



‘You’re right,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘Paying for lunch is nothing to me.’

‘If paying for lunch is nothing to you then there isn’t a problem,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Move out of my way.’

‘The problem is you need to tell me why I paid for your lunch,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘If you can’t tell me why then you need to give back my money.’

‘Sir, you should remember why you paid for lunch,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You said you didn’t want to see people who would make you lose your appetite then you paid for lunch. If you’re this poor and want to take back your money, in the future don’t act like you’re a rich person.’

‘Do you know who I am?’ Hong Shi Chi asked. ‘I’m Hong Shi’s company’s heir.’

‘Even if you have money, you shouldn’t insult people,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘You’re an interesting country bumpkin,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

Hong Shi Chi pretended he was going to unbutton his shirt.

‘Sleazy pervert, get out of my way!’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting didn’t doubt the Hong siblings were related. Hong Shi Na and Hong Shi Chi were both sleazy people.

‘What are you going to do if I don’t want to get out of the way?’ Hong Shi Chi asked.

‘Sleazy pervert, I’m going to beat you to death!’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting used the suitcase to hit between Hong Shi Chi’s legs.

‘Ah!’ Hong Shi Chi yelled.

Hong Shi Chi didn’t expect Da Tian Ting would hit him.

Da Tian Ting ran to a taxi, and escaped Hong Shi Chi.

‘Vicious woman, come back here!’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘I’m going to make you pay!’

Hong Shi Chi was embarrassed he lost twice to the country bumpkin. When he found her again, he was going to chop her into pieces.

Da Tian Ting heard Hong Shi Chi’s threat from the taxi. She knew it wasn’t safe

for her to live anywhere in the city. But there was no one in the city for her to visit so she had no plans to return to the city.

‘You can’t hide!’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘I’ll catch you, and I’ll chop you into pieces!’

Hong Shi Chi regretted he didn’t take a photo of the country bumpkin to find out her identity.

After the pain between Hong Shi Chi’s legs subsided. He limped into the apartment building, held onto the stair rail and limped to Feng Kai Ze’s apartment.

‘Big brother, why are you limping and why is your pants dirty?’ Hong Shi Na asked.

Hong Shi Na grew up with Hong Shi Chi. She knew her big brother was a clean freak who always washed his hands with distilled water. Whoever ruffled his feathers was dead meat.

‘Don’t remind me,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘I ran into a crazy woman.’

‘Crazy woman?’ Hong Shi Na asked. ‘Big brother, let’s go home. I’m worried about you. What if the crazy woman gave you rabies?’

‘Shi Na, didn’t you ask me to come see Feng Kai Ze?’ Hong Shi Chi asked.

‘We can see Kai Ze another day,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘Besides, big brother, you’re not in a good state to see people.’

‘You’re right,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘I can’t meet my little brother-in-law dressed like this.’

‘Big brother, I have good news,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘I used a little scheme to make Kai Ze’s woman leave him. Big brother, are you proud of me?’

‘That’s my little sister,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘We were born not to lose to anyone.’

‘That’s right,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘We don’t lose to anyone. Feng Kai Ze is my man, no one can take him away from me.’

‘Shi Na, remember to be a sweet and gentle woman in front of Feng Kai Ze,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘And use any dirty tactics to hold onto him behind his back. A

man of calibre always want a sweet and gentle woman.'

'Yes big brother,' Hong Shi Na said.

The Hong siblings walked downstairs. They didn't know Feng Kai Ze overheard their conversation through his key hole. He was waiting for Hong Shi Na to leave so he could go explain to Da Tian Ting. He didn't expect the man who insulted Da Tian Ting at the restaurant was Hong Shi Na's big brother, Hong Shi Chi. He thought the Hong siblings were a vexing pair of siblings.

Feng Kai Ze cast the vexing Hong siblings out of his mind. He cared about clearing Da Tian Ting's misunderstanding.

Feng Kai Ze rang Da Tian Ting's door bell and knocked on her door. She didn't answer so he unlocked her door.

Da Tian Ting's apartment was dark and quiet. Feng Kai Ze ran to her bedroom, her suitcase was gone. He switched on the lights and searched her apartment. He found everything he bought her on the dining table, and a note from her, 'I'm giving back your belongings.'

Feng Kai Ze ran out onto the streets. He couldn't see Da Tian Ting. He couldn't call Yang Fei either, because he didn't want Yang Fei to snitch to his father. It was going to take him longer to find Da Tian Ting, but he was going to find her at any cost.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eighty-Eight

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 22, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Eighty-Nine

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Eighty-Nine



Feng Kai Ze spent a whole day looking for Da Tian Ting. He was worried the Hong siblings did something to her so he called Yang Fei to help him find Da Tian Ting.

Feng Jia Yong saw Feng Kai Ze called Yang Fei's phone, and answered the call.

'If you want someone from Feng's company to help you then come home right now,' Feng Jia Yong said.

'Where's Yang Fei?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Come home right now,' Feng Jai Yong said. 'If you don't, you'll regret it.'

Feng Jai Yong hung up, and gave the phone back to Yang Fei. Feng Jai Yong received a phone call from Hong Shi Na's father who took Hong Shi Na to the hospital because Feng Kai Ze injured her arm. Then her father took her to the Feng Mansion to ask him to discipline Feng Kai Ze.

‘Shi Na, does your arm still hurt?’ Dai Fang Dung asked.

‘Aunty, my arm doesn’t hurt anymore,’ Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na didn’t show her anxiety.

‘Little sister, you don’t need to cover up your pain for Kai Ze’s sake,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘Big brother, it’s not Kai Ze’s fault,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘It was an accident.’

If Feng Kai Ze found out Hong Shi Na came to his father’s home to scheme against him, he would hate her more. But her father saw the bruise on her arm, and made her come to the Feng Mansion to get answers.

‘Jia Yong, I hope you’ll discipline your son today,’ Hong Tian Fang said. ‘Shi Na is my little princess. Even a small scratch on her hurts my heart. Look at her injured arm. If it was an accident, I would let it go. But your son injured her arm.’

‘Tian Fang, if this is Kai Ze’s fault, I promise I’ll discipline him to your satisfaction,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

Hong Shi Na was the only person who noticed Dai Fang Dung looked disapprovingly at her. She knew Dai Fang Dung saw straight through her, and that she did something to provoke Feng Kai Ze.

‘Jia Yong, do you think we should reconsider our children’s marriage?’ Hong Tian Fang asked.

‘There is nothing to reconsider, the wedding is set for next month,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

Feng Jia Yong was adamant Feng Kai Ze had to marry Hong Shi Na.

‘Shi Na told me Kai Ze hates her,’ Hong Tian Fang said. ‘I don’t want my daughter to have an unhappy marriage.’

‘Dad, I want to marry Kai Ze,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘Dad, Shi Na and Kai Ze’s engagement is all over the media,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘It’ll be bad publicity if Shi Na breaks off the engagement. Besides, Shi Na loves Kai Ze.’

‘How Kai Ze feels toward Shi Na matters too,’ Hong Tian Fang said.

‘It’s settled,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘If I decided Kai Ze is marrying Shi Na, he’ll marry her.’

Hong Tian Fang knew his daughter marrying into the Feng Household would make Hong Shi’s company prosper. But his daughter’s happiness was important to him too.

Dai Fang Dung pictured Feng Kai Ze destroying the altar if he was forced to marry Hong Shi Na.

Feng Kai Ze arrived at the Feng Mansion, and saw more dusty guests sitting in the living room.

‘Why did you ask me to come here?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Hong Tian Fang wasn’t impressed with his future son-in-law’s rudeness.

‘Don’t you know how to greet guests?’ Feng Jia Yong asked.

‘They are your guests, not mine,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘It’s you!’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘And you’re Hong Shi Chi,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Big brother, do you know Kai Ze?’ Hong Shi Na asked.

Hong Shi Na thought if Hong Shi Chi and Feng Kai Ze were friends, Hong Shi Chi could help her get closer to Feng Kai Ze.

‘We met once,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘Little sister, do you know about Kai Ze’s girlfriend?’

‘Big brother...’ Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na wanted to keep Da Tian Ting a secret, because she didn’t want her family to stop her from marrying Feng Kai Ze.

‘Shi Chi, did you say Kai Ze has a girlfriend?’ Hong Tian Fang asked.

‘Dad, several days ago I saw Kai Ze took his girlfriend to a restaurant,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘They were affectionate toward each other in public.’

Hong Tian Fang stood, and pulled Feng Kai Ze’s shirt collar.

‘Feng Kai Ze, you need to apologise to my daughter!’ Hong Tian Fang said.

Feng Kai Ze pushed Hong Tian Fang off him.

‘Hong Tian Fang, take a good look at the truth,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I never agreed to marry your daughter. She is no one to me. Why do I need to apologise to her?’

Hong Shi Chi stood in between Hong Tian Fang and Feng Kai Ze, and he shoved Feng Kai Ze’s chest.

‘Feng Kai Ze, you dare lay your hands on my father?’ Hong Shi Chi asked.

‘Your father laid his hands on me first,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘How can you disrespect an elder?’ Hong Shi Chi asked

‘Disrespect?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘From the start I never agreed to marry Hong Shi Na. If you and your family are desperate to marry her off, find a ghost to marry her.’

‘You!’ Hong Tian Fang and Hong Shi Chi said at the same time.

‘Dad, big brother, this is all a misunderstanding,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘It’s not a misunderstanding,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I have a girlfriend. I love my girlfriend, and she’s the only woman I’m marrying. Even if Hong Shi Na was the only woman left in the world, I wouldn’t marry a useless pampered princess like her.’

‘Feng Kai Ze!’ Hong Shi Chi called.

Hong Shi Chi aimed a punch at Feng Kai Ze’s face, and missed.

Everyone were relieved Hong Shi Chi’s fist missed Feng Kai Ze’s face.

‘Don’t make me use force,’ Feng Kai Ze warned Hong Shi Chi.

‘If you hurt my little sister again, I’ll pulverized your skull,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t need to avoid Hong Shi Chi, because Yang Fei restrained Hong Shi Chi’s arm behind his back.

‘Mr Hong junior, this is the Feng residence, if you take another swing at young master Feng then I won’t be courteous,’ Yang Fei said.

‘Shi Chi, don’t be disrespectful in front of elders,’ Hong Tian Fang said.

Dai Fang Dung could let insults slide, but she hated seeing anyone harm Feng Kai Ze.

‘Tian Feng, you came here to speak on behalf of your daughter,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘That I can understand. But I’m not going to standby, and let you and your family injure Kai Ze.’

Hong Shi Na didn’t want her future mother-in-law to hate her more.

‘Big brother, calm down,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘Shi Na, he has a girlfriend, why are you taking his side?’ Hong Shi Chi asked.

‘Big brother, I don’t want to turn a small matter into a big deal,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘If we don’t turn it into a big deal, he’ll think people from the Hong Household are weaklings,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘Enough!’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Everyone shut up!’

Everyone became silent, and didn’t make a move.

‘Tian Fang, even if Kai Ze hurt Shi Na’s feelings, this is my home,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘You and your son shouldn’t insult and hit my son in my home.’

‘Jia Yong, it’s all a misunderstanding,’ Hong Tian Fang said. ‘It’s only a tiff between young people.’

Hong Shi Chi was frustrated to see his father bow down to Feng Jia Yong. Feng’s company was a richer company than Hong Shi’s company, but Hong Shi’s company wasn’t a small fry.

‘Tian Fang, don’t think you can look down on my family because Kai Ze is marrying Shi Na,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘It’s all a misunderstanding,’ Hong Tian Fang said. ‘Kai Ze injured Shi Na’s arm. I only came here to hear Kai Ze apologise to Shi Na.’

‘Kai Ze, apologise to Shi Na,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘I don’t need to apologise to her,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘She jammed her arm against a door.’

‘Shi Na, tell everyone how you injured your arm,’ Dai Fang Dung said.



‘It’s my fault,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘Feng Kai Ze injured Shi Na’s arm,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘Kai Ze, is Shi Na telling the truth?’ Dai Fang Dung asked.

‘It’s her fault for holding onto my waist without my permission,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I gave her several warnings to let go of me, injuring her arm is nothing. If she dares touch me again, I’ll cut off her arm.’

Feng Kai Ze walked to Yang Fei, and gave him a warning.

‘Yang Fei, this is the first time you betrayed me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze walked past Yang Fei, and left the Feng Mansion. Da Tian Ting wouldn’t have misunderstood and left him if Yang Fei didn’t give his address to Hong Shi Na.

The Hong family heard the Feng Kai Ze’s heartless tone of voice, and they understood why it was rare for outsiders to know Feng Kai Ze’s identity.

Dai Fang Dung was angry the Hong family ganged up on Feng Kai Ze.

‘Shi Na, you should know Kai Ze is someone with set principals,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘Kai Ze wouldn’t lay a finger on anyone who didn’t provoke him. I believe Kai Ze gave you many chances to let go of him before he bruised your arm. If you don’t want Kai Ze to cut off your arm, heed his warning and don’t touch him again.’

Dai Fang Dung stood, and walked upstairs.

The Hong family wanted to order Dai Fang Dung to come back for them to insult and hit her.

‘Tian Fang, don’t come here again to ask me to discipline my son when it’s your daughter who’s in the wrong,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Kai Ze is the heir of Feng’s company. Hong Shi’s company will rely on his guidance in the future, you and your family should respect his reasonable boundaries.’

‘I’m sorry,’ Hong Tian Fang said. ‘I should have waited to listen to Kai Ze’s explanation before jumping to the wrong conclusions.’

Hong Shi Chi didn’t think he and his family did anything wrong, it was Feng Kai

Ze who injured Hong Shi Na's arm.

'Everyone should leave,' Feng Jia Yong said. 'We'll postpone the wedding day to give Kai Ze time to accept Shi Na.'

'I agree,' Hong Tian Fang said.

Hong Tian Fang led his disgruntled family outside the Feng Mansion.

Hong Shi Na didn't agree to have the wedding day postponed, but her impulsiveness made Feng Kai Ze have a poorer impression of her.

In the car, Hong Shi Chi didn't hold back his tongue.

'Dad, why did we have to bow down to the Feng family?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

'Shi Chi, we shouldn't let our emotions rule us,' Hong Tian Fang said. 'Now isn't the right time to keep our heads high.'

'Dad, today I suffered the biggest insult in my life,' Hong Shi Chi said.

'Shi Chi, you know we can't afford to offend Feng Jia Young,' Hong Tian Fang said.

'Dad, we don't need to be scared of Feng's company,' Hong Shi Chi said.

'Until Hong Shi's company is more powerful than Feng's company, we need to bow our heads,' Hong Tian Fang said. 'Shi Chi, Shi Na, don't offend Feng Kai Ze. I've only met Feng Kai Ze for the first time today, but I'm certain he's more ruthless than Feng Jia Yong. Shi Na, don't provoke Feng Kai Ze again.'

'Dad, I haven't done anything wrong,' Hong Shi Na said. 'I only want to make Kai Ze love me.'

'Shi Na, if you want a man like Feng Kai Ze to love you, you need to use more subtle tactics,' Hong Tian Fang said.

'Yes dad,' Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na was going to use fall proof schemes.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Eighty-Nine

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 22, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Ninety

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)

# "THE GANGSTER!"



## Chapter Ninety



Feng Kai Ze spotted Yang Fei's car following his car so he stopped his car on the side of a quiet road.

'Kai Ze, I'm sorry,' Yang Fei said.

'Yang Fei, from now on, we're no longer friends,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You should call me young master Feng.'

'Kai Ze, I was cornered,' Yang Fei said. 'Boss made me give your address to Miss Hong. Forgive me this time.'

'Then it's better if you don't know anything about my life that way you can't betray me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'In the future don't call me, and I won't call you.'

'Kai Ze, do you need to be this way?' Yang Fei asked. 'We've been friends for years.'

'Did you see me as your friend when you betrayed me?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I know it’s wrong of me to disclose your whereabouts,’ Yang Fei said. ‘But I didn’t tell boss everything like you pursuing a woman named Da Tian Ting.’

Feng Kai Ze held Yang Fei’s shirt collar.

‘You’ve been spying on me?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I was curious about your sudden interest in a woman so I looked into Da Tian Ting’s background a little,’ Yang Fei said. ‘Boss asked me to find out why you wanted Da Tian Ting blacklisted from working in the city, and he told me to make Da Tian Ting disappear. I found out you cared about Da Tian Ting after you asked me to look for her. If I chose to listen to boss, Da Tian Ting wouldn’t be alive today.’

‘Yang Fei, if you touch even a strand of her hair, it’ll be you who won’t be alive,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Kai Ze, if I wanted to harm her, I would have ousted her to boss,’ Yang Fei said. ‘You know how boss operates.’

Feng Kai Ze let go of Yang Fei’s shirt collar. He believed Yang Fei didn’t tell his father about Da Tian Ting being his girlfriend. But he didn’t forgive Yang Fei for betraying him.

‘Kai Ze, where there is smoke there is fire,’ Yang Fei said. ‘You can’t hide her from boss forever.’

‘Stay out of my business,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze walked to his car, and Yang Fei chased after him.

‘Kai Ze, I know you’re looking for Da Tian Ting,’ Yang Fei said. ‘Do you need my help to look for her?’

‘No,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I can find her myself. From now on, stay out of my business. I don’t need you.’

Feng Kai Ze got into his car, and drove off.

Yang Fei didn’t follow Feng Kai Ze’s car again. He knew he lost Feng Kai Ze’s trust. But he didn’t know why Feng Jia Yong wanted Feng Kai Ze to marry Hong Shi Na.

Yang Fei returned to the Feng Mansion. Feng Jia Yong looked like he was burning the newspaper he was reading, and Dai Fang Dung walked into the living room.

‘Yang Fei, did you chase after Kai Ze before?’ Dai Fang Dung asked. ‘Is he OK?’

‘Yes mistress,’ Yang Fei said. ‘Young master Feng, is angry. He needs time to cool down.’

‘Why must Kai Ze struggle outside instead of taking advantage of his status?’ Dai Fang Dung asked.

‘Struggle?’ Feng Jia Yong asked. ‘He has Feng’s company backing him. Every time he needs help, he finds someone from Feng’s company to help him. Tell me, how is his life a struggle?’

‘Jia Yong, ask yourself since Kai Ze understood his situation, how many times has he relied on his status in the outside world?’ Dai Fang Dun asked. ‘If you ask Yang Fei how many times Kai Ze sought him out for help, Yang Fei would give you a number less than the number of fingers a person owns.’

‘Yang Fei, how many times?’ Feng Jia Yong asked.

‘Boss...’ Yang Fei said.

Yang Fei didn’t want to anger Feng Jia Yong, but he couldn’t lie because Dai Fang Dung knew the truth.

‘How many?’ Feng Jia Yong asked.

‘Since young master Feng was a little to now, five times,’ Yang Fei said.

‘It appears my son wants to oppose me,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘Jia Yong, I don’t understand why you’re forcing Kai Ze to marry Shi Na,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘But you should listen to me. Your relationship with Kai Ze is already strained. Forcing him to marry Shi Na will be the final straw, and you’ll lose a son.’

‘Kai Ze marrying Shi Na will make Feng’s company more powerful,’ Feng Jia Yong said.

‘Jia Yong, aren’t you satisfied that Feng’s company is the most powerful

company in the city?’ Dai Fang Dung asked. ‘Why must you sacrifice your son pointlessly?’

‘What would you know?’ Feng Jia Yong asked.

‘I don’t need to understand the business world to understand life,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘It’s meaningless to be rich and powerful, if you chase away your family. You’ll end up old and alone.’

‘Dai Fang Dung!’ Feng Jia Yong warned.

‘I’ve lived half my life but I don’t have one true friend,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘Walking around with the title of Mrs Feng means nothing to me. I’m tired of living a lonely life being Mrs Feng for more than twenty years. The truth is I’m envious of ordinary families who can eat dinner together, laugh and cry together.’

‘If you’re lonely, go and find a social hobby,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘I don’t want to listen to your dribble.’

‘Then listen to my advice,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘Kai Ze, will cut ties with you if you’re adamant about him marrying Shi Na.’

‘There’s no alternative choice,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘Kai Ze must marry Shi Na.’

‘Jia Yong, tell me if you’re being coerced,’ Dai Fang Dung said. ‘I remembered you considered betrothing Jia Yong and Shi Na when they were younger. But you didn’t mention it again until now.’

‘Boss, if you tell us why, we can help you,’ Yang Fei said.

‘Have you heard of Hao Feng Lian Ming?’ Feng Jia Yong asked.

‘The underground gang?’ Yang Fei asked. ‘Boss, they’re not a threat. Feng’s company can eliminate them.’

‘Hao Feng Lian Ming isn’t an ordinary underground gang,’ Feng Jia Yong said. ‘They have a member named Ju Feng who is a genius. Ju Feng owns thirty percent of Feng’s company’s shares using unscrupulous methods. If he continues owning more Feng’s company shares, he’ll be the biggest shareholder and I’ll lose control of Feng’s company.’

‘What do we do now?’ Dai Fang Dung asked. ‘Is that why you want Kai Ze to

marry Shi Na? Jia Yong, I believe you can think of a different way to deal with Ju Feng without sacrificing Kai Ze.'

'I decide who my son marries,' Feng Jia Yong said. 'I'm not giving control of Feng's company to an outsider.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 22, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)



UVB – Chapter Ninety-One

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapter Ninety-One



Feng Kai Ze was frustrated he couldn't find Da Tian Ting. He read her diary to calm himself.

XXXX

Today is Children's Day. I knew little monkey is hiding in the classroom. So I made a bet with him that whoever finds the most red packets today, will get to eat the other person's lunch for a month. I didn't care about finding red packets, I only wanted little monkey to play with our classmates.

XXXX

Yesterday, little monkey found the most red packets on Children's Day. He won a cute rabbit. I really liked the cute rabbit, but I'm happy he won.

Feng Kai Ze closed Da Tian Ting's diary, and peered at the lonely sea under the

moonlight.

A Ferrari braked a centimetre from the front of Feng Kai Ze's car.

The driver of the Ferrari opened Feng Kai Ze's passenger door, and casually sat in his car.

'Why did you call me to meet you in the middle of the night?' the man asked.

'What do you think?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'You wouldn't risk meeting me unless it's something dangerous,' the man said. 'Tell me, what's the problem?'

'Ju Feng, I found her,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'You found the owner of the diary?' Ju Feng asked.

'Yes,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Kai Ze, I know the owner of the diary is important to you,' Ju Feng said. 'But she means nothing to me. Don't risk everything over a trivial matter. You could have called me over the phone to tell me you found her.'

'But I lost her again,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Then go find her,' Ju Feng said. 'You've been looking for her over a decade, what's another two years looking for her?'

'Right now, not seeing her for a day makes me depressed,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'If it takes me another year or two, I'll go crazy.'

'You're the heir of Feng's company, use your status to find her,' Ju Feng said. 'You know what she looks like, put an ad in the paper and you'll find her soon.'

'I won't use my status as Feng's company's heir again,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'And I don't want to post photos of her everywhere, because it'll put her life in danger.'

'Young master Feng, you're asking me to find a needle at the bottom of the ocean,' Ju Feng said. 'If you want my help, I'll do a search to look for anyone named Da Tian Ting who is staying at a hotel or renting a home.'

'I was waiting for you to make that offer,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'You made me lose my sleep tonight,' Ju Feng said. 'What do I get for finding

her?’

‘Tell me what you want,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘I’ll tell you after I think about what I want from you,’ Ju Feng said.

‘Thank you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Kai Ze, right now thirty percent of Feng’s company shares are in our hands,’ Ju Feng said. ‘What’s the next step? I heard you’re marrying Hong Shi Na.’

‘Do you think I would marry her?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I’ve known you for more than a decade,’ Ju Feng said. ‘You only have your fierce apple in your heart. Listen to me, be careful of the Hong snake.’

‘Hong Shi Na, isn’t a gentle princess,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I know she’s a snake. I don’t want to waste my breath talking about her. Thirty percent isn’t enough. We need at least fifty percent. See if you can find other people who want to sell their shares to you.’

‘I found some people who will sell,’ Ju Feng said. ‘Don’t lose sight of our bigger picture by only focusing all your attention to pursue your fierce apple.’

‘You’re right,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Right now, I’m focusing all my attention on pursuing my fierce apple.’

Feng Kai Ze watched Ju Feng’s fingers worked their magic on Ju Feng’s laptop. Feng Kai Ze was only interested to see if Da Tian Ting’s name popped up on the screen.

‘Kai Ze, I know you’re not someone who neglects achieving your goals because of one woman,’ Ju Feng said.

‘Since you know, keep moving your fingers to look for her,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Ju Feng’s fingers continued looking for Da Tian Ting.

‘Kai Ze, Feng Jia Yong will force you to marry Hong Shi Na,’ Ju Feng said.

‘No one can force me to do something I don’t want to do,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Does that mean you’ll cut ties with your father?’ Ju Feng asked.

‘If he cared about our father and son relationship then he wouldn’t selfishly

sacrifice me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘What’s taking you so long? Why haven’t you found her?’

‘Your expectations are too high,’ Ju Feng said. ‘It’s not guaranteed she can be found.’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t want to resort to posting Da Tian Ting’s photos everywhere.

‘I found her!’ Ju Feng said.

‘Where?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Yesterday there’s a woman named Da Tian Ting with a social security number xxxx,’ Ju Feng said. ‘She rented a home in a country town xxxx.’

‘It’s her,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze was happy he finally found Da Tian Ting. He should have looked for her in her father’s hometown where they went to primary school together.

‘Kai Ze, don’t tell me you want to go there,’ Ju Feng said.

‘If I don’t go there, how else will I get my wife back?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Feng Jia Yong would have blacklisted you from crossing the city borders,’ Ju Feng said. ‘He won’t let you leave the city unless you marry Hong Shi Na.’

‘I don’t need to use my name,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘True,’ Ju Feng said. ‘You can use your other identity, Hao Ming.’

‘Get out of my car so I can go bring my wife home,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Hey,’ Ju Feng said. ‘Do you have to be this blunt?’

Ju Feng was the only person in the world who knew about Feng Kai Ze’s double identity.

‘If you don’t get out, I’ll throw you out,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Kai Ze, you’ve turned into a man who prioritizes his flower over his friend,’ Ju Feng said. ‘Remember to be careful, someone is investigating Hao Ming’s identity. Go find your fierce apple, I’m going home to sleep.’

Ju Feng got out of Feng Kai Ze’s car, and went back to his Ferrari.

Feng Kai Ze sped off to bring his wife home.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety-One

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 22, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Ninety-Two

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Ninety-Two



Da Tian Ting's father's hometown was called Gu Wen, because it looked like an ancient province. There were food carts on the roads, and life was simple. The locals fought over small things, reconciled, fought again and reconciled again.

'Miss, here are the dishes you ordered,' a waitress said.

'Thank you,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Which road do I take to get to Gu Wen's primary school?'

'Walk down that road, take a left and you'll see a bridge,' the waitress said. 'Take a right, and you'll see Gu Wen's primary school. It sounds complicated, but it's a ten minute walk from here.'

'Thank you,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting gave the waitress a ten dollar tip by habit.

'Miss, you don't need to give me money,' the waitress said. 'It's my pleasure to

help a customer.'

'Take it,' Da Tian Ting said 'It's a tip.'

'Miss, you rented a room here,' the waitress said. 'You don't need to tip too.'

The waitress went to serve another customer, and Da Tian Ting put the ten dollar note back in her bag. Da Tian Ting wasn't use to the country way of life yet after living in the city for years.

'Look over there,' the first customer said. 'There are people filming.'

'What's there to see?' the second customer said. 'People come here to film every year.'

'Let's go take a look,' the first customer said. 'It'll give us something new to talk about. I heard the actress is a former beauty queen. I want to take a look at her.'

Da Tian Ting quickly ate the bowl of noodles and soup. Then she followed the crowd to the filming location, because she was curious if the actress was Mac Kai An, because Ding Xiao Ran once told her the actress Mac Kai An was a former beauty queen.

Da Tian Ting wasn't surprised Gu Wen was a popular filming site for ancient films, because of the ancient buildings and the untouched natural landscape. She squeezed through the crowd, took one look at Mac Kai An to satisfy her curiosity then she walked to the primary school.

Mac Kai An was sitting on a chair. There was disdain in her eyes, because of the country bumpkin crowd. Her assistant held an umbrella over her head, and a fan to cool her face.

Mac Kai An's management team were scolding the crew.

'Stop delaying the shoot,' a manager said. 'How dare you make Mac Kai An wait this long?'

The director sat next to Mac Kai An and apologised.

'Miss Mac, I'm sorry,' the director said. 'The lead actor is stuck in traffic. He's an unknown, and doesn't understand time is big money on a film set.'

‘How can the casting director cast a newbie to star opposite me?’ Mac Kai An asked. ‘I’m not starring in your film anymore.’

‘Miss Mac, be patient a little longer,’ the director said.

‘Director, everyone knows I don’t like filming with new lead actors because they become enamoured and obsessed with me,’ Mac Kai An said.

‘Miss Mac, the casting director couldn’t schedule a known lead actor,’ the director said. ‘But I can assure you that you’ll be satisfied with this new lead actor.’

‘I’ve seen pretty boys before,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘Unless he’s better looking than the actor Tian Huang, I don’t need to see him.’

Mac Kai An walked off the set. Her eyes were drawn to a tall man with a mysterious aura, and who was more handsome than Tian Huang. She remembered the director’s praise, and smiled. If the mysterious man was the lead actor, she wanted to get acquainted with him so she walked back to the set.

‘I’ll star opposite the new lead actor,’ Mac Kai An said to the director.

Feng Kai Ze arrived at Gu Wen. He was on his way to the primary school, but the crowd obstructed his way. He parked a car nearby the crowd, and walked to the crowd. There was a film set, and he understood why people were curious.

Feng Kai Ze turned around, and walked toward the primary school.

‘You!’ Mac Kai An called. ‘Come back here!’

Mac Kai An couldn’t believe the new lead actor was such an irresponsible man. How could he arrive late then walk off the set?

The director chased after Feng Kai Ze, because he thought it was someone from Mac Kai An’s management team.

‘Miss Mac, is calling you!’ the director said.

‘She didn’t call my name,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Besides, I don’t need to stop if she tells me to stop.’

‘If you offend me, you’ll never find work in this industry again!’ Mac Kai An said.



‘You belong in a mental hospital,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze walked around Mac Kai An and the director.

‘Guards!’ Mac Kai An called. ‘Take him back to the set!’

The security guards were scared to approach Feng Kai Ze.

‘You shouldn’t offend me,’ Feng Kai Ze warned.

‘Sir, do you know you offended Mac Kai An?’ a guard asked.

‘She offended me so she’ll no longer be a star,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘If you apologise to me right now, I’ll forgive you,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘I have ways to make a nobody like you disappear forever.’

Feng Kai Ze called Ju Feng’s phone.

‘I want you to change the lead actress who is filming in Gu Wen right now,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

The guards were scared of the way Feng Kai Ze smiled at them, and they let him walk away.

‘If you take another step, I’ll replace the lead actor!’ Mac Kai An said.

Feng Kai Ze dismissed the nutty actress, and walked to the primary school to find his fierce apple.

The casting director ran to Mac Kai An.

‘Miss Mac, he isn’t the lead actor,’ the casting director said.

‘What?’ Mac Kai An asked.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety-Two

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)

- 

***Related***

[November 22, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapter Ninety-Three

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapter Ninety-Three



Da Tian Ting walked into Gu Wen’s primary school. It looked the same like it did sixteen years ago. She remembered her childhood memories clearly as though it happened a day ago.

It was a Sunday, there were a couple of teachers working on the weekend but no sighting of students. Da Tian Ting’s fondest memories happened at the primary school.

During primary school, Da Tian Ting’s mother prepared a lunch box for her to bring to school every day. After school she walked home, and her mother gave her a welcome home hug. Her father picked her up from school on his days off work. Her family home was near the primary school, but she was always happy

to have her father walk home with her. During that period of her life, she felt like she lived in heaven.

Da Tian Ting walked around the playground, and reminisced about her primary school days. She sat on the popular swing. Back then if she didn't come to school early, she wouldn't get to sit on the swing. She looked at the monkey bars that she fell off many times. Then there was a phase when she went through a badminton and a wall climbing craze.

Da Tian Ting walked around the primary school garden. She used to lie on the grass, looked up at the sky and dream about the future. In the garden there was a rose bush she planted.

Da Tian Ting wrote all her beautiful childhood memories in her diary. Her precious diary was stolen by someone she secretly took care of. He was someone she fought every day, they were fire and water. He was her little monkey, sixteen years ago he disappeared without a trace. If he didn't steal her diary then she would have filed him under her fond childhood memories category.

Da Tian Ting used to snuck food and drinks into little monkey's school bag so he wouldn't be malnourished. She secretly took care and protected him, but he stole her diary. If she was honest with herself, she would admit she missed the thieving little monkey.

Da Tian Ting remembered little monkey was mature for his age. She thought it was because of his poor background. He was quiet and rarely smiled or played with their classmates. It made her want to make him smile, and have fun. She would pick fights with him and have bets with him so he wouldn't be lonely.

Da Tian Ting walked to the patch of grass where she used to fight with little monkey.

'Little monkey, it's been sixteen years,' Da Tian Ting said to the patch of grass. 'Are you healthy, and living a good life?'

Sixteen years ago, Da Tian Ting ran to little monkey's home to take back her diary. But his neighbors told her that his father came to take him back to the city. Since that day she didn't see him or her diary again and she stopped writing her memories in a diary.

‘Hateful little monkey!’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I took care and protected you, but you stole my diary.’

Da Tian Ting didn’t notice her little monkey followed behind her, and remembered their childhood memories too.

Feng Kai Ze had a happy childhood because of Da Tian Ting.

‘Fierce apple!’ Feng Kai Ze called.

Da Tian Ting snapped out of her childhood memories. She turned around, and couldn’t believe who stood behind her.

‘Why are you here?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Are you little monkey?’

Was Feng Kai Ze and little monkey the same person? Da Tian Ting thought they had to be, because little monkey gave her the nickname fierce apple.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m little monkey.’

Da Tian Ting understood why Feng Kai Ze stalked her, lied to her about pursuing her, gave her a makeover, bought her luxury goods, took care of her and played with her feelings. He wanted to take revenge on her because he was little monkey.

Da Tian Ting punched Feng Kai Ze’s face.

‘Ah!’ Feng Kai Ze cried out. He covered his bruised face. ‘Why did you hit me?’

‘Does it hurt?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Of course it hurts,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Good,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘It means I’m not dreaming.’

‘How can you be dreaming in the middle of broad daylight?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I don’t want to dream, I want to hit you hateful little monkey!’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You dare appear in front of me. I want to beat you to death.’

Feng Kai Ze protected his head, and he let Da Tian Ting hit his body.

‘Hey,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Stop hitting me.’

‘I’ll stop hitting after I’m satisfied,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I can forgive you for picking on me when we were kids. But I can’t forgive you for playing with my

feelings. I want to hit you until your face turns into a pig's head so you won't dare to play me again. I hate you.'

'Stop hitting me,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting wanted to punch Feng Kai Ze's face again, but the bruise on his face stopped her. Her hands and arms ached from hitting his body. Was he little monkey? Little monkey was scrawny, but Feng Kai Ze was tall, broad and strong.

Feng Kai Ze felt overwhelmed to see Da Tian Ting again. He hugged her and kissed his fierce apple. She pushed him away, but he held her and showed her how much he missed her.

Da Tian Ting lost. She stopped denying her feelings toward Feng Kai Ze, and the pain he caused her.

Da Tian Ting stole Feng Kai Ze's heart sixteen years ago. He thought it was only fitting if he got to steal her heart in the same place she stole his heart.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety-Three

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 22, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Ninety-Four

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Ninety-Four



Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting sat on the grass with their backs against each other.

The cool breeze helped clear Da Tian Ting's head. She reasoned Feng Kai Ze must have read her diary, and found out the truth. Even if he lied and hurt her, she liked the feeling of having someone cared about her.

'Little monkey, who are you?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'I'm little monkey,' Feng Kai Ze said evasively.

Feng Kai Ze had a mess to clean up. It wasn't the right time for him to reveal his identity to Da Tian Ting, because he didn't want to make her worried about him.

Da Tian Ting stood, and kept her distance from Feng Kai Ze.

‘Even now you don’t want to tell me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze maintaining his mysterious persona made Da Tian Ting want to explode.

‘I’ll tell you everything if you marry me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Stop using it as an excuse to hide your real identity to me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t care anymore.’

Da Tian Ting walked away from Feng Kai Ze. He chased after her, and held her hand.

‘I’m having some problems at home,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I promise I’ll tell you everything after things are stable at home.’

Feng Kai Ze only wanted to bring happiness into Da Tian Ting’s life.

‘What problems?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘It’s a complicated situation and involves many people,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I want you to trust me. I promise I’ll tell you everything after I find ways to deal with the problems.’

‘If you’re a fugitive, stay away from me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘In your eyes, am I a fugitive?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Who else can you be?’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You’re only a cold pretty boy.’

‘You shouldn’t take your one of a kind cold pretty boyfriend for granted,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting mimed throwing up.

‘You’re right,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ve never seen a one of a kind specimen like you before.’

‘Then open your eyes and take a look at what a rare specimen I am,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Dummy,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Don’t misunderstand my insult for a praise.’

‘If it makes you happy, I’ll be your dummy,’ Feng Kai Ze said.



Feng Kai Ze leaned his face close to Da Tian Ting's face.

'Hey,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Don't invade my personal space.'

Da Tian Ting turned her head to the side, because her face turned red.

Feng Kai Ze turned Da Tian Ting's head to face him again.

'Someone's face is red,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'No one's face is red,' Da Tian ting denied.

Da Tian Ting covered her hot face.

'If only you can see how bright red your face is right now,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'I don't want to see you anymore,' Da Tian Ting said and walked off.

Feng Kai Ze held onto Da Tian Ting's hand.

'Tian Ting, will you be my girlfriend?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'No,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting thought a man like Feng Kai Ze wouldn't sincerely care about her.

'Why not?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze had prepared himself for rejection. But hearing Da Tian Ting rejecting him was painful.

'Take a good look at our reality,' Da Tian Ting said. 'We met each other here when we were kids, but we're strangers now. We don't know anything about each other. How can I say yes to being a stranger's girlfriend?'

'Didn't you get to know me during the weeks we spent together?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'I don't know you enough,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I saw you kissing Hong Shi Na. You have a girlfriend. I hate cheaters like you the most.'

Da Tian Ting didn't want to remember Feng Kai Ze kissing Hong Shi Na. Feng Kai Ze belonged with a rich beautiful heiress like Hong Shi Na.

'I'm framed,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'It's not what you think.'

'I saw you kissing her,' Da Tian Ting said. 'How can you deny the truth?'

‘I admit Hong Shi Na is infatuated with me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘But I hate her. She throwing herself at me has nothing to do with me.’

‘You’re a man,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘She’s a woman. If you didn’t want her to hug and kiss you, she can’t overpower you.’

‘If you don’t believe me, I’ll make her stand in front of you and tell you truth,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting heard Feng Kai Ze’s tone of voice sounded like her tone of voice when people misunderstood her. It made her believe she misunderstood him.

‘You don’t have to go that far to make me believe you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I’ll do anything to make you believe me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘It’ll be long a time before I’ll believe you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting let go of Feng Kai Ze’s hand, and walked away from him.

Feng Kai Ze ran in front of Da Tian Ting.

‘Tian Ting, will you be my girlfriend?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Didn’t you understand what I said?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘I don’t understand,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You need to show me your sincerity,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘If you can move my heart, I’ll consider being your girlfriend.’

Da Tian Ting thought it was time for her to truly take a gamble on love, and experience what it was like to be in a relationship with a man who did care about her.

Feng Kai Ze squatted in front of Da Tian Ting, and piggy backed her.

‘I’ll start showing how sincere I am by piggy backing you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Hey,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Put me down. It’s embarrassing if people see you piggy backing me.’

‘There’s nothing embarrassing letting your boyfriend piggy backing you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If people see, they’ll only be envious of you.’

Da Tian Ting held Feng Kai Ze’s shoulders, and told herself not to feel shy and

to enjoy being pampered by a pretty boy.

‘Little monkey, tell me the truth,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Do you truly like me or are you playing with me? People have deceived me in the past. I don’t know how I’ll cope if you’re playing with me. If that’s the case, you should stop playing games with me.’

‘Da Tian Ting, I told you I’m being sincere from the start,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I, Feng Kai Ze can’t live without Da Tian Ting. You’ll be my wife for the rest of your life.’

Da Tian Ting was happy to hear Feng Kai Ze’s confession.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety-Four

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 23, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Ninety-Five

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Ninety-Five



The Gu Wen locals were envious of Da Tian Ting being piggybacked by Feng Kai Ze.

‘Look at that dreamy man,’ the first girl said. ‘He looks like a movie star.’

‘Too bad he has to carry an ordinary woman on his back,’ the second girl said.

‘I wish the woman on his back is me,’ the first girl said.

‘Why don’t you go and ask him to piggyback you?’ the second girl asked.

‘I can only dream,’ the first girl said.

‘Come and eat fresh hot wonton!’ a cart owner promoted.

‘Little monkey, put me down,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I want to eat wonton.’

Feng Kai Ze put Da Tian Ting down, and they walked to a table in front of the wonton cart. He remembered he used to walk past the same wonton cart on the way to primary school. Back then he and his mother couldn’t afford even one bowl of wonton. Thinking about how much his mother struggled to support him made him resent his father. His father had cornered his mother to Gu Wen. It was his father’s fault his mother wasn’t alive for him to take care of his mother.

He wished his father wasn't Feng Jia Yong.

Da Tian Ting didn't notice Feng Kai Ze was lost in his thoughts. She ran to the wonton cart, and smiled at the owner.

'Boss, two bowls of wontons,' Da Tian Ting ordered.

'Coming right up,' the owner said.

Da Tian Ting sat at the table next to Feng Kai Ze, and the owner carried a tray of wontons to their table.

'Little monkey, don't you want to eat?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'I'm eating,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze wanted to eat the bowl of wonton heartily.

'When I was little, my parents brought me here to eat wonton,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Sometimes I'll eat two bowls on my own.'

Da Tian Ting thinking about her mother abandoning her and her father for a rich man made her resented her mother.

'What's wrong?' Feng Kai Ze asked. 'You were happy a moment ago.'

'Nothing,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Ah... it's hot.'

'Be careful,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'If one bowl isn't enough, I'll buy you another bowl.'

'I want to eat it while it's hot to remember the excitement I felt when I got to eat wonton as a little girl,' Da Tian Ting said. She held a wonton in front of Feng Kai Ze's mouth. 'This is the best wonton in Gu Wen, have a taste.'

Feng Kai Ze didn't care if Da Tian Ting wasn't aware of how affectionate she was toward him, because he was happy to be the recipient.

'Hey,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Why aren't you eating the food I'm feeding you? It's your privilege to be fed by me.'

'Yes,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'It's my privilege to be fed by you.'

Feng Kai Ze opened his mouth wide, and ate the wonton. He thought it was the tastiest wonton he ever ate. He wanted time to freeze in that moment so he

and Da Tian Ting would always be together.

‘Little monkey, you lived in Gu Wen too,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Do you think the wonton tastes the same as it did when you were a little boy?’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t want to think about his bastard father.

‘I’m sorry if I said something to upset you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Would you believe me if I told you that I didn’t get to eat one bowl of wonton when I was a little boy?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I...’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting remembered Feng Kai Ze’s bare lunch box, and believed him.

‘Little monkey, what happened to your family when you were a little boy?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘My father abandoned my mother to marry a rich heiress,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘He chased my mother away from the city. At that time my mother was pregnant with me, and she came to Gu Wen to protect me from my father. My mother was malnourished, and her health deteriorated after giving birth to me. My mother worked part-time, because she was scared of my father finding us. She used the money she earned to raise me. We were poor, but my mother loved me.’

Da Tian Ting thought it was insensitive to ask Feng Kai Ze who his father was, and how his father could be that cruel. She didn’t want him to remember his painful past.

‘Little monkey, open wide and eat another wonton,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze understood Da Tian Ting was cheering him up. He ate the wonton, put his painful past aside and smiled at her.

‘It’s my turn to feed you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Open wide.’

Da Tian Ting ate the wonton Feng Kai Ze fed her, and thought the wonton tasted sweet. She finally understood why lovers went on dates together, because they wanted to share the sweet feeling together.

‘What are you thinking about?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I’m thinking what it feels like to be in love,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting felt comfortable to tell Feng Kai Ze anything that was on her mind.

‘If you want to know, you can acknowledge me as your boyfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You can try me out, and see what it feels to be in love.’

Da Tian Ting stuffed a wonton in Feng Kai Ze’s mouth to stop his sweet talk.

‘Don’t think you can sweet talk me into accepting you as my boyfriend,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting considered being Feng Kai Ze’s lover, because she liked being with him. She told herself not to worry about the future when he would leave her since he wasn’t going to marry her.

‘Open wide,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I don’t care if you don’t acknowledge me as your boyfriend, because it’s enough that I acknowledge I’m your boyfriend.’

Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze blissfully fed each other, and enjoyed being together.

‘Aren’t you embarrassed to be seen in public with an ugly woman?’ Mac Kai An asked.

Mac Kai An sat down next to Feng Kai Ze. She changed out of her ancient costume, and wore a provocative strapless short dress that exposed her cleavage and smooth legs. Behind her were her two assistants.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety-Five

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***





## UVB – Chapter Ninety-Six

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Ninety-Six



Feng Kai Ze hated anyone interrupting his alone time with Da Tian Ting, especially a stinky nutty woman like Mac Kai An.

Da Tian Ting eyes were treated to two giant plastic buns. She thought Mac Kai An might as well be naked because the short dress didn't leave anything to the imagination.

'Little monkey, do you know her?' Da Tian Ting whispered in Feng Kai Ze's ear.

Da Tian Ting hated seeing another woman sitting next to Feng Kai Ze.

'I don't know her and I don't want to know her,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'But she acts like she knows you,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I know Andy Lau but Andy Lau doesn't know me, do you get it now?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Oh,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Mac Kai An held back her tongue because she wanted to give Feng Kai Ze a better impression of her.

‘Sir, I came here to apologise for the misunderstanding earlier,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘I hope you can forgive me.’

Mac Kai An leaned her chest closer to Feng Kai Ze. He stood up suddenly, and she would have toppled over if her two assistants didn’t brace her fall.

‘Miss Mac, are you OK?’ the two assistants asked.

‘Sir, I apologised to you,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘You shouldn’t take things too far.’

‘Miss, we’re strangers,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Keep a respectable distance from me.’

Feng Kai Ze sat on Da Tian Ting’s other side.

‘Do you want to eat anything else?’ Feng Kai Ze asked Da Tian Ting.

‘No,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze put a one hundred dollar note on the table, held Da Tian Ting’s hand and helped her stand.

‘Let’s go,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting away from the nutty stinky woman.

‘Come back here!’ Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An ran to Feng Kai Ze, and stopped him from leaving with Da Tian Ting.

‘Do you know who I am?’ Mac Kai An asked.

Mac Kai An was allowed to reject men, but men were not allowed to reject her. She didn’t believe she couldn’t seduce Feng Kai Ze.

‘What’s impressive about being an actress?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Little monkey, is she the actress named Mac Kai An?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting wasn’t used to seeing actresses in real life. She didn’t know if Mac Kai An was a good actress behind the beauty queen face.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Are you her fan?’

‘No,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Mac Kai An pulled Da Tian Ting away from Feng Kai Ze.

‘Move out of the way!’ Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An held onto Feng Kai Ze’s arm, and smiled sweetly at him.

‘Today I’m following you,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘We can do anything you want.’

Da Tian Ting waited for Feng Kai Ze to push Mac Kai An away from him. She didn’t expect him to be heartless.

‘Ah... it hurts,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘Let go of my hair!’

Feng Kai Ze pulled Mac Kai An’s hair and pushed her toward her assistants.

‘Miss Mac, are you OK?’ the assistants asked.

Security guards in the distance heard Mac Kai An’s scream, and they ran to her.

‘You’re going to regret rejecting me!’ Mac Kai An said to Feng Kai Ze.

‘We’ll see who the person who’ll regret is,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze stepped to Da Tian Ting’s side.

‘Did she injure you anywhere?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘No,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting wondered if one day Feng Kai Ze would pull her hair and push her away like what he did to Mac Kai An.

‘Good,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If she hurts you, I’ll make her pay tenfold.’

Da Tian Ting thought it would be easy for her to fall for Feng Kai Ze’s protectiveness.

‘Guards, teach him a lesson,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘I’ll deal with the consequences.’

The security guards surrounded Feng Kai Ze. He stood in front of Da Tian Ting, and punched a guard’s nose.

‘Thank you for helping me to stretch my rusty muscles,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze round kicked a guard, elbowed two guards and side kicked another guard.

‘How can you call yourselves guards?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Go home, and ask your mothers to find someone to babysit you.’

‘Wow, little monkey is impressive,’ Da Tian Ting praised and applauded.

Da Tian Ting wished she could have taken a photo of Feng Kai Ze defeating the guards who ganged up on him.

Feng Kai Ze turned around and smiled at Da Tian Ting.

Mac Kai An picked up a chair and threw it at Feng Kai Ze’s back. Da Tian Ting pushed Feng Kai Ze away, and the chair struck her arm.

‘Ah!’ Da Tian Ting cried out.

‘Tian Ting!’ Feng Kai Ze called. ‘Where are you injured? I’m taking you to the hospital.’

‘She’s a weakling,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t need to go to the hospital. Let’s go home, and put ointment on my arm and I’ll OK.’

‘You can’t always neglect your body,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘What if your arm is broken? I’m taking you to the hospital.’

Feng Kai Ze supported Da Tian Ting to the car, and gave Mac Kai An a warning.

‘If my girlfriend has a serious injury, you’re going to pay the highest price,’ Feng Kai Ze said to Mac Kai An.

Mac Kai An denied she was scared of Feng Kai Ze’s retribution. She was a star, and untouchable. No one can harm her, not even a man who knew how to fight a little.

‘Miss Mac, I don’t think he was bluffing,’ an assistant said.

‘I’m not someone they can offend,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘If those two people appear in front of me again, they’ll be dead.’

The wonton cart owner, picked up his chair and shook his head at Mac Kai An walking away with her assistants and the defeated security guards.

‘Young people these days are rough and stupid,’ the owner said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety-Six

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 23, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Ninety-Seven

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Ninety-Seven



Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting home from the hospital.

‘Lucky the doctor said you only have minor bruising,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Next time you’re not allowed to risk your life again. Your body isn’t made of steel. What would have happened if you injured your head?’

‘What do you want me to do?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Let the chair break your back?’

‘I don’t care,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You have to promise me you won’t risk your life or put yourself in harm’s way again.’

Feng Kai Ze was happy Da Tian Ting cared about him to risk her life, but he would rather sacrifice his life for her safety.

‘I want to go home and sleep,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I’ll piggyback you home,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘No,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You’re tired too.’

Feng Kai Ze piggybacked Da Tian Ting home.

‘Put me down,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I want to piggyback you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze’s back felt like Da Tian Ting’s armor. She wanted to protect her

armor, and not let another person steal her armor. Someone taking Feng Kai Ze away from her was different to Da Ming Sheng taking Shang Duan Hua from her, because Feng Kai Ze cared about her.

‘What’s wrong?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I’m scared,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting wasn’t confident she could stop someone else stealing Feng Kai Ze from her.

‘Why are you scared?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze wasn’t the scrawny little monkey anymore. He was stronger, and could protect Da Tian Ting and himself.

‘I’m scared someone will steal you from me like how Da Ming Sheng stole Shang Duan Hua from me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘In your heart, who is more important, me or Shang Duan Hua?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze only wanted to hear that he was the only man in Da Tian Ting’s heart.

‘Shang Duan Hua is no longer in my heart,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘How he lives his life is none of my business. Right now, I only want to cherish you, but I’m scared you won’t cherish me. Because I don’t have looks, money or a good family that attracts men.’

‘You don’t need to attract other men,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You only need to remember that I love you for who you are.’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t want Da Tian Ting to be scared of losing him, but he was happy to know he held an important place in her heart.

‘Men love beauty, especially beautiful women,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I’m not other men, I’m me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Have you forgotten you’re beautiful? Do you remember the wedding? You’re more beautiful than the bride.’

Feng Kai Ze thought his fierce apple was beautiful on the inside and outside.

‘That was temporary beauty,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Now I’m back being my ugly duckling self. I left all the clothes, bags, jewellery and shoes you bought me at my old apartment.’

Da Tian Ting regretted giving back the luxury goods in the heat of the moment.

‘You gave them back to me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘But now I want to wear them,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting wanted to look beautiful for Feng Kai Ze.

‘Tomorrow I’ll take you shopping,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘No,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You spent too much money on me. Don’t waste any more money to buy clothes for me.’

‘If it’s something you want, I’m happy to buy it for you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘I don’t want to waste money,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I find money for you to spend,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If I don’t spend it on you then it’ll be a waste.’

‘You only know how to sweet talk,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘It’s the truth,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You’re the only woman I want to spend my money on.’

‘Little monkey, you’ve moved my heart a little,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting loved having someone love her.

‘It’s good your heart is this easy to move,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Little money, why did you have to splash cold water on my heart?’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I take back what I said. You haven’t moved my heart.’

‘I was joking,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Don’t be angry at me.’

‘Next time you’re not allowed to joke like this,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I promise,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Good,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting’s heart was beating to the sounds of Feng Kai Ze’s footsteps. She



had fallen for Feng Kai Ze. She was prepared to gamble her heart again for a chance at happiness.

By the time Feng Kai Ze piggybacked Da Tian Ting back to the apartment hotel, it was eight o'clock in the evening.

‘Little monkey, it’s late,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Why are the guests carrying their luggage and leaving?’

‘I don’t know,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze piggybacked Da Tian Ting into the lobby. She slid down his back, and they weren’t afraid to face the goons Mac Kai An hired.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety-Seven

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 23, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Ninety-Eight

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Ninety-Eight



In the lobby, a dozen bulky goons stood behind Mac Kai An.

A man walked toward Mac Kai An, and eyed her exposed cleavage.

‘Miss Mac, you’re more beautiful in person,’ the man said.

‘Are you here to return your key?’ Mac Kai An asked.

‘Yes,’ the man said.

The man’s hands were itching to squeeze Mac Kai An plastic giant buns.

Mac Kai An gave the man money, and he thought it was his lucky night. He got to ogle a plump chest, and receive money from a beautiful woman.

Feng Kai Ze understood Mac Kai An came to the apartment hotel Da Tian Ting rented for revenge.

Da Tian Ting thought that she and Feng Kai Ze couldn’t fight against all the goons Mac Kai An hired.

‘Little monkey, let’s leave,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘We shouldn’t risk our lives to

save our pride.'

'Don't be scared,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'We don't know who'll lose yet.'

Feng Kai Ze's confident smile reassured Da Tian Ting.

The concierge brought Da Tian Ting's suitcase to her, and they smiled apologetically at her.

'Miss, we're sorry we can't give you accommodation,' a concierge said.

'Why?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting suspected it was Mac Kai An using fame to play dirty.

'Miss, I'm sorry,' the concierge said.

Da Tian Ting noticed a few more guests accepted money from Mac Kai An, and left the apartment hotel.

A while later, all the guests left the apartment hotel either for money or out of fear of offending Mac Kai An. Only Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze stayed in the lobby.

Mac Kai An flicked her hair.

'I've paid for all the accommodation in Gu Wen,' Mac Kai An said. 'Today I'm going to show you two what happens if you offend me. If you two don't apologise to me then don't dream of leaving Gu Wen.'

The goons looked menacingly at Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze. He stood in front of her, and she held onto his shirt. If they weren't up against a group of people, she wouldn't be scared to curse and fight.

'Little monkey, let's leave,' Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze turned around, and caressed Da Tian Ting's face.

'Is she scaring you?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze wasn't going to be merciful toward Mac Kai An, because Mac Kai An hurt and scared Da Tian Ting.

'They have a big group of people,' Da Tian Ting said. 'We only have us. We should leave.'

Two goons closed the entrance doors.

‘Don’t worry,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Tonight we’ll be staying here.’

‘But she paid for all the rooms,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘We’ll see if she can afford to pay for our room,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘What’s there to see?’ Mac Kai An asked. ‘I’ve paid for all the rooms here.’

‘Then let’s have an auction,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Are you scared to see who’ll outbid who?’

‘Fine,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘I’m not scared of outbidding you.’

‘Good,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Five hundred thousand dollars. You can start raising the bid.’

Everyone were gobsmacked after hearing Feng Kai Ze’s high first bid.

‘Do you need to waste that much money?’ Da Tian Ting asked softly.

Da Tian Ting wouldn’t save anywhere close to five hundred thousand dollars in her lifetime.

‘It’s only lunch money,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m not going to let her off the hook for scaring you.’

Mac Kai An was scared of losing more than five hundred thousand dollars.

‘Five hundred and ten thousand dollars,’ Mac Kai An said.

‘Six hundred thousand dollars,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Six hundred and ten thousand dollars,’ Mac Kai An said.

‘Eight hundred thousand dollars,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

The goons changed their minds. They wanted to be on Feng Kai Ze’s side.

‘Eight hundred and ten thousand dollars,’ Mac Kai An said.

‘One million dollars,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘One point one million dollars,’ Mac Kai An said.

‘One point two million dollars,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘One point five million dollars,’ Mac Kai An said.

‘One point eight million dollars,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Two million dollars!’ Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An was scared of her own mouth. She would be poor if she wasted two million dollars.

‘Congratulations Miss Mac, you’ve paid two million dollars for accommodation here,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Have a good stay.’

Feng Kai Ze picked up Da Tian Ting’s suitcase, held her hand and walked toward the entrance doors.

‘Come back here!’ Mac Kai An said.

Feng Kai Ze turned around.

‘What’s the problem?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘What do you want?’ Mac Kai An asked.

‘Everyone here knows what I want to do,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You outbid me so I’m leaving with my girlfriend.’

‘Do you think you can bluff, make me pay two million dollars and leave?’ Mac Kai An asked.

‘You used your own mouth to bid, it has nothing to do with me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting was relieved Feng Kai Ze tricked Mac Kai An to cough up two million dollars. It would teach Mac Kai An to be humble in the future.

‘You’re too much,’ Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An wouldn’t have money to buy food in the morning.

‘I warned you that you’ll pay a high price if you offend me by hurting and scaring my girlfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘This is the high price you have to pay. You’re no longer a star.’

‘My star status isn’t something you can take away from me,’ Mac Kai An said.

‘Watch the news and read the headlines tomorrow and you’ll understand,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘What do you mean?’ Mac Kai An asked.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t answer Mac Kai An, and he took another step to the entrance doors with Da Tian Ting.

‘Don’t let them leave!’ Mac Kai An said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety-Eight

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 23, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter Ninety-Nine

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter Ninety-Nine



The goons surrounded Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze. She was right, rich people were trouble.

‘Little monkey, what do you we do now?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘They’re going to hit us.’

Da Tian Ting didn’t want her and Feng Kai Ze to die or end up in the hospital for months.

‘Remember, no matter what happens, you’re not allowed to risk your life to protect me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘This is no time to sweet talk,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze looked like an emperor surrounded by his eunuchs.

‘As long as you’re safe, I’m always in the mood to sweet talk,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze squeezed Da Tian Ting’s nose.

‘Hey,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Be serious. We’re outnumbered by stronger people.’

‘Where are they?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Little monkey, I don’t want you to risk your life,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Let me apologise to Mac Kai An, and we can leave.’

‘You don’t need to apologise to her,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘She provoked me, because she doesn’t want to live anymore.’

‘But...’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Stand beside me and leave the rest to me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Under different circumstances, Da Tian Ting would have argued with Feng Kai Ze to state her case.

Mac Kai An wanted to teach Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting a lesson. How dare Feng Kai Ze choose an ugly woman over her?

‘Stop exchanging lovey dovey looks,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘Don’t you two know what a dire situation you’re both in?’

‘Mac Kai An, since you look like you want to suffer, I’ll help you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Mac Kai An thought an ordinary person wouldn’t have the same cold deadly aura like Feng Kai Ze. Whoever he was, she wasn’t going to lose to him.

‘You’re in no position to help me,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘It’s me who’ll help you suffer.’

‘I’ll make your death wish come true,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Anyone with eyes can see who’s in control,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘One word from me, and you two will become punching bags.’

‘Are you certain?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I’m certain,’ Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An’s initial fear wore off. She was in control so she had nothing to fear.

Mac Kai An’s confidence increased Da Tian Ting’s anxiety. Da Tian Ting didn’t want anyone to hurt Feng Kai Ze.



Feng Kai Ze calmly called Ju Feng's phone.

'I want you to make Mac Kai An's name blacklisted from her agency and the film industry,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'After you're done, I'll explain why.'

Mac Kai An thought Feng Kai Ze was bluffing. It wasn't possible for him to destroy her career with one phone call.

'Stop bluffing,' Mac Kai An said. 'A nobody like you have no power to destroy my career.'

'You'll get to see right now,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze looked at the news on his phone, and was satisfied with Ju Feng's handiwork. Ju Feng released all of Mac Kai An's scandalous secrets.

Da Tian Ting was curious why Feng Kai Ze was smiling. She looked over his shoulder, but he closed the window screen on his phone before she could see what was on his phone.

'Hey,' Da Tian Ting said. 'What were you looking at that made you so happy?'

'Reading a bit of news,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'How can you read the news at a time like this?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting stood closer to Feng Kai Ze, and felt safer.

'I'm a forgiving person,' Mac Kai An said. 'If you two apologise to me right now, I'll pretend nothing happened.'

'I'm...' Da Tian Ting said.

'Don't apologise to her,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Apologising isn't a big deal,' Da Tian Ting said. 'It'll save our hinds.'

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze's damaged brain was having a relapse.

'You didn't do anything wrong so you don't need to apologise,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Don't make a big deal,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I'm making a big deal,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'She hurt and scared you, and offended me. She ignored the warnings I gave her. I'm not giving her another

chance.'

'Little monkey...' Da Tian Ting said.

'Who are you?' Mac Kai An asked. 'Tell me your name so I can write your name on your tombstone.'

Mac Kai An received a phone call from her agency's CEO.

'CEO Tu, is something wrong?' Mac Kai An asked. 'Why are you calling me at this late hour?'

Feng Kai Ze smiled at the sight of Mac Kai An's pale complexion while she received the bad news from her agency.

Da Tian Ting was worried Feng Kai Ze was sick, because he was smiling during a dangerous situation.

'What?' Mac Kai An asked. 'CEO Tu, how can you cancel my contract? I just signed a new contract with your agency. Why did you break all my film contracts? Give me a legitimate reason why... hello, CEO Tu?'

Mac Kai An was about to call CEO Tu's phone, but her manager called.

'What?' Mac Kai An asked. 'What do you mean I don't need to come on set tomorrow? What do you mean all my film contracts are cancelled? If you don't find out why, you're fired... hello?'

The goons backed away from Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting, because Mac Kai An's look of despair meant she lost everything.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter Ninety-Nine

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
-

## ***Related***

[November 23, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 100

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 100



Da Tian Ting noticed Mac Kai An's arrogance was missing, and she nudged Feng Kai Ze.

'Hey,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Did you play a dirty trick?'

Da Tian Ting was happy no one was going to hurt Feng Kai Ze. But his ability to destroy Mac Kai An's life with one phone call meant he wasn't an ordinary rich pretty boy. It also meant the chance of their relationship working out was slim. Her head ached thinking about the big difference between their social statuses. Was she overthinking things or was it inevitable?

'Now do you believe me?' Feng Ka Ze said. 'All you need to do is always stay by my side, and let me deal with the threats. Look at how everything turned out in our favor.'

Feng Kai Ze didn't want to see Da Tian Ting apologise to anyone who hurt her.

'I can smell something on you,' Da Tian Ting said.

‘What smell?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Body odor,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze was disappointed Da Tian Ting didn’t praise his ingenuity.

‘But I love it,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Really?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Yes,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Don’t misunderstand. I love your ingenuity, not you.’

‘I don’t care what you love about me as long you love it,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Mac Kai An was in no state of mind to be envious of Da Tian Ting having a man like Feng Kai Ze love Da Tian Ting. Mac Kai An called everyone on her phone, but no one told her why she was dumped by her agency and why all her film contracts were cancelled. Mac Kai An wanted to know why everyone treated her like the plague when a moment ago she was a star in their eyes.

‘What did you two do to me?’ Mac Kai An asked.

‘Now you know the price you have to pay, it’s too late,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You...’ Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An held her tongue. Someone who made her lose everything overnight wasn’t someone she could offend.

‘Sir, who are you?’ Mac Kai An asked in a respectful tone of voice.

Mac Kai An didn’t know Feng Kai Ze’s identity, but he taught her that he was someone who had the world at his fingertips.

‘You’re not worthy to know who I am,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I gave you many warnings, but you didn’t listen. Now you know what happens if you offend me.’

‘You...’ Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An lost everything. She couldn’t express her anger like in the past. She needed to find a way to get Feng Kai Ze to forgive her.

‘Miss Mac, take a look at this...’ an assistant said.

Mac Kai An looked at the scandalous photos of her in bed with directors. The headlines attached to the photos were along the lines of starlet sleeps her way

to the top, and falls from grace. There were also photos of her breast implants surgery.

Mac Kai An snatched the phone, and stomped on the phone.

‘Who posted the photos online?’ Mac Kai An asked.

Mac Kai An wanted to know who hacked onto her laptop and found out all her secrets.

‘How did you do this?’ Mac Kai An asked Feng Kai Ze.

‘Didn’t you see me make a phone call?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze turned to face a concierge.

‘She doesn’t have two million dollars to pay for all the rooms here,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Bring my girlfriend’s suitcase to her room.’

The apartment hotel owner came to greet Feng Kai Ze.

‘Sir, since Miss Mac can’t afford to pay two million dollars then your one point eight million dollars count,’ the owner said.

‘Boss, Miss Mac won the bid so his bid doesn’t count,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Boss, you can confirm with Miss Mac if she still wants to pay for all the rooms. If she wants to then we’ll leave. If she doesn’t want to then we’ll stay, and pay according to this apartment hotel’s fixed daily rates.’

Feng Kai Ze loved his frugal fierce apple. He wondered why Da Tian Ting didn’t use the same confidence to put down Mac Kai An earlier.

The owner knew Feng Kai Ze had no obligations to pay one point eight million dollars since Mac Kai An won the bid.

‘Miss Mac, will you be paying...’ the owner said.

‘Don’t dream about it,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘This dump isn’t worth two million dollars.’

‘If you don’t want to pay for my apartment hotel rooms then why did you chase away my guests?’ the owner asked.

‘Right now I’m in a bad mood,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘Don’t ask me nonsense.’

‘Bad mood?’ the owner asked. ‘It’s me who is in a bad mood. You have to compensate my loss.’

‘Boss, if you want compensation then get it from those two people,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘It’s their fault I lost everything, and can’t pay you two million dollars.’

‘Miss Mac, aren’t you scared of being struck by lightning?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘You chased away boss’ guests. It’s you who has to compensate for his loss. You won the bid, but now you’re backing out and pushing the responsibility onto an innocent party. Miss Mac, if you don’t have money then don’t act like a rich person and insult people. You should be scared your insanity will kill you.’

Mac Kai An wanted to insult Da Tian Ting, but she didn’t want to offend Feng Kai Ze.

‘In the future make up your mind before you walk outside your home,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Decide whether you want to wear clothes or walk around naked. The transparent clothes you’re wearing are a public eyesore. Don’t go around flaunting your one dollar lopsided plastic breast implants. No one would even pay a cent to touch them. And don’t act like you’re a gangster. If you want to see what gangsters look like I can help you make a call to deliver gangster DVDs to your home.’

‘You...’ Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An was going crazy listening to Da Tian Ting’s insults.

Feng Kai Ze applauded Da Tian Ting’s confidence.

‘That’s my confident woman,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I want to hear you insult her more.’

‘What are you doing?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting held Feng Kai Ze’s hands to stop him applauding. She only lectured Mac Kai An, because she didn’t want him to waste money compensating the owner’s loss when it was Mac Kai An who defaulted.

Da Tian Ting regretted lecturing Mac Kai An, because she wanted to avoid trouble like people taking revenge on her.

‘You deserve to be applauded,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Can’t you see there are still a dozen strong men around us?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘What if they suddenly attack us?’

‘Gentlemen, if you don’t want to lose everything like Miss Mac then disappear right now,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

The goons immediately left the apartment hotel.

Mac Kai An was scared to stand alone in front of Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting.

‘You two should wait, one day I’ll get even,’ Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An needed to rebuild her star status if she wanted to take revenge on Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting.

Mac Kai An’s assistants followed her outside the apartment hotel.

The apartment hotel became a ghost town.

‘Boss, are you still accepting guests?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘If you don’t want to serve us then we’ll go find a different place to stay.’

If Da Tian Ting wasn’t with Feng Kai Ze, he would have paid for all the rooms. He respected her frugality, because he didn’t want her to leave him if he wasted money.

‘Of course,’ the owner said. He turned to a concierge. ‘Quickly bring the guests’ suitcase to their room.’

The concierge carried Da Tian Ting’s suitcase.

‘Boss, give me a room next to my girlfriend’s room,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Right away sir,’ the owner said.

Feng Kai Ze smiled at Da Tian Ting.

‘Do you mind about us being neighbors?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Would you change rooms if I mind?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘No,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Wherever Da Tian Ting slept, Feng Kai Ze wanted to be nearby to watch over her. The next step he wanted to take was sleeping in the same room as her.

‘Then don’t ask pointless questions,’ Da Tian Ting said.



Feng Kai Ze walked side by side with Da Tian Ting to their rooms. That day she felt like her lowly status was elevated. It felt strange keeping her head high in front of someone like Mac Kai An. It was Feng Kai Ze's love and support that helped her feel confident, and fall deeper for him.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 100

## Share this:

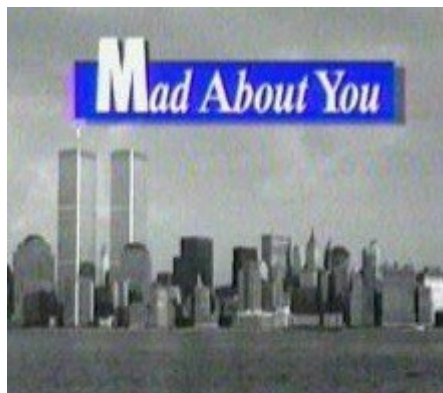
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 23, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 101

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter 101



Da Tian Ting dreamt she was a princess standing next to a rose bush waiting for Prince Feng Kai Ze. She saw him on a white horse riding toward her. She raised her arms for him to carry her onto the white horse, but a faceless woman appeared on the horse behind him and he rode off with the faceless woman.

Da Tian Ting chased after Feng Kai Ze.

‘Come back,’ Da Tian Ting screamed. ‘Come back. Don’t leave me.’

Da Tian Ting woke up when Feng Kai Ze disappeared with the faceless woman. Was it a dream or premonition?

Feng Kai Ze heard Da Tian Ting’s scream. He jumped out of bed and ran to her apartment hotel room next to his. He didn’t have a key to her room so he kicked the door open.

Feng Kai Ze ran to Da Tian Ting’s bedroom. He thought someone intruded into her room, but she was sitting upright on the bed and taking deep breaths. He sighed in relief, and sat next to her on the bed.

‘Did you have a nightmare?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Da Tian Ting's dream of Feng Kai Ze leaving her with another woman was vivid in her mind. In her hazy state she hugged Feng Kai Ze.

'Don't leave me,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting's dream perpetuated her fear of Feng Kai Ze leaving her.

'I'll never leave you,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze didn't know what Da Tian Ting dreamt of, but he was happy she wanted to hug him for comfort.

'Little monkey, you can't lie to me,' Da Tian Ting said. 'You promised you won't leave me so you can't leave me.'

'Trust me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I won't break my promise to you, I won't leave you.'

Da Tian Ting looked into Feng Kai Ze's eyes. She believed he wouldn't leave her. During the time they've spent together, he'd shown her that he kept all the promises he made to her. If she trusted him, did it mean she gave her heart to him?

'Are you lost in my eyes?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Little monkey, I think I love you,' Da Tian Ting said. 'What do I do now?'

'I've been waiting for this moment,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'But I'm scared,' Da Tian Ting said.

'You have me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You have nothing to fear. I'll be here to protect you even if the sky falls down.'

'I'm not beautiful or gentle,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Will you leave me heartlessly like how Shang Duan Hua left me?'

Da Tian Ting was abandoned by everyone she cared about. If Feng Kai Ze left her too, she would have nothing left and didn't know if she could recover.

'I've seen you at your ugliest and I still love you,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You have nothing to worry about. You only need to do one thing, and we'll always be happy together.'

Feng Kai Ze was happy his dream came true after sixteen years, Da Tian Ting

loved him and he wanted to give her a happy life.

‘What do I need to do?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting thought if it was something she could do, she would do it so she and Feng Kai Ze would always be happy together.

Feng Kai Ze caressed Da Tian Ting’s face.

‘Love me and trust me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Love and trust you?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Love me, and trust me that I won’t do anything to hurt you.’ He held Da Tian Ting’s hand over his heart. ‘Because for sixteen years, you’ve been living in my heart. There’s only room for you in my heart.’

‘I don’t know if it’ll be enough,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘But I’ll love you and trust you so we can be together.’

Da Tian Ting was grateful Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng betrayed her. She didn’t love Shang Duan Hua, she took care of him out of duty to honor her father’s wish for her to marry Shang Duan Hua before her father died.

‘All you need to do is stay with me and build a future together with me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze was willing to wait his whole life for Da Tian Ting to fall madly in love with him like how he loved her.

‘I will,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘It’s past two o’clock in the morning,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You need to sleep.’

Da Tian Ting let Feng Kai Ze tuck her in bed. She didn’t close her eyes, because she was scared it was all a dream, and he would disappear after she closed her eyes.

‘Sleep,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m sleeping in the room next to your room. If anything happens, just scream and I’ll run to you.’

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting was reassured, and closed her eyes. She felt the distance between her and Feng Kai Ze shortened, and that they had a strong chance to be

together.

Feng Kai Ze waited for Da Tian Ting to fall asleep. Then he turned off the lights, and returned to his room.

Da Tian Ting had another dream. She dreamt Prince Feng Kai Ze came back to her, and carried her onto his white horse. It was only the two of them on the white horse.

Da Tian Ting was unaware that danger was lurking while she dreamt.

Hong Shi Chi had commissioned a sketch artist to sketch a portrait of Da Tian Ting, and sent his men to find her.

‘Young master Hong, we’ve found the woman you’re looking for,’ a man said. ‘She’s staying at an apartment hotel in Gu Wen with her boyfriend.’

‘I’m going to get even with her for hitting me with her suitcase and insulting me,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

Hong Shi Chi walked downstairs and bumped into Hong Shi Na.

‘Big brother, where are you going?’ Hong Shi Na asked.

‘To teach someone a lesson,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘Big brother, I need your help,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘Tell me and I’ll help you,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘I don’t know where Kai Ze is,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘I asked Yang Fei, and he said he didn’t know where Kai Ze is either. I think Kai Ze is avoiding me. Big brother, help me find Kai Ze.’

‘When I find Feng Kai Ze, I’m going to teach him a lesson for neglecting my little sister,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘Big brother, I only want you to find Kai Ze,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘Don’t hurt him.’

‘Don’t worry,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘Wait here, I’ll find him for you.’

‘Yes big brother,’ Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na was going to use a softer approach to capture Feng Kai Ze’s heart.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 101

## Share this:

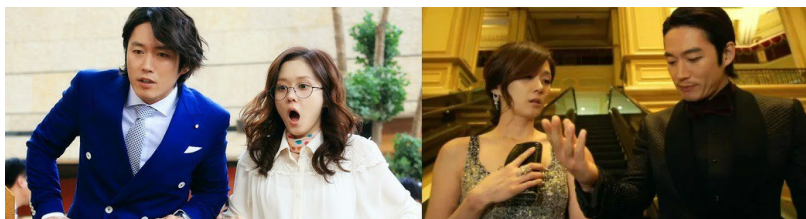
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 24, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 102

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 102



On Monday morning, Da Tian Ting tried on different combinations of her limited casual clothes, but her pjs looked better than the casual clothes she owned.

Since the wedding, Da Tian Ting wanted to show Feng Kai Ze the best side of her. It was the first time she cared about what to wear to go out. The wedding didn't count because Feng Kai Ze hired stylists so she didn't need to think about what to wear.

'What do I do?' Da Tian Ting asked her old clothes. 'My clothes are old and ugly. What do I wear? Why wasn't I embarrassed to wear them in the past?'

Da Tian Ting laid on the bed, and looked at the ceiling.

'Can someone tell me what I should wear?' Da Tian Ting asked the ceiling.

Feng Kai Ze walked into Da Tian Ting's bedroom. She was lying on the bed, her clothes were scattered around the bedroom and she was mumbling to herself. He figured she was trying on clothes, and indecisive about what to wear.

'I know what to do!' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting sat up on the bed, and noticed Feng Kai Ze standing in her

bedroom.

‘When did you get here?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

After Feng Kai Ze’s moving love declaration, Da Tian Ting was embarrassed to let him see her wear ugly clothes.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t care what Da Tian Ting wore. He sat on the bed next to her.

‘What’s your solution?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I...’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘What’s wrong?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Normally you’ll tell me everything that’s on your mind. Why are you shy today?’

‘I’m not being shy,’ Da Tian Ting denied.

Feng Kai Ze gently rubbed Da Tian Ting’s lips.

‘Looks like someone is being shy because of me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘It means I’m someone important to you.’

‘No one is shy because of you!’ Da Tian Ting denied.

Da Tian Ting turned her head away from Feng Kai Ze.

‘OK,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll stop teasing you. But I want you to know that I love you being yourself. You don’t need to change yourself for me.’

‘Are you telling the truth?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘You don’t mind me looking like an old maid?’

‘Looks fade but the truth doesn’t,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You’re beautiful being yourself.’

‘I’m not changing myself,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I only want to wear nice clothes to look like I’m suited to be with you when we’re out on the streets.’

Da Tian Ting didn’t want to lose Feng Kai Ze if one day he decided he didn’t want to be seen with a country bumpkin anymore.

‘I get it,’ Feng Kai Ze said. He held Da Tian Ting’s hand. ‘Let’s go.’

‘Where?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Shopping,’ Feng Kai Ze said.



‘To buy what?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Everything,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

If Feng Kai Ze wanted to take Da Tian Ting shopping, she needed money so she didn’t forget to carry her bag.

Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting walked downstairs to the lobby. She admired his back that was sturdy and reliable.

The concierge saw their only guests in the lobby, and they greeted their guests.

‘Sir, madam, what would you like to eat for breakfast?’ a concierge asked.

‘I’m taking my girlfriend out to eat breakfast,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting outside the apartment hotel. She wanted to slow down, and admire the country view, but he was in a rush.

‘Hey,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘We’re just going shopping. Slow down, there’s no rush.’

‘Let’s get into car,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Can’t we walk for a while longer?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘We can walk at the shops,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

One hour later, Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting came out of a designer clothing shop dressed to the nines.

Da Tian Ting finally understood the positive effect of wearing nice clothes.

‘Now we look like a matching couple,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘So don’t say nonsense like you’re not suited to be with me.’

‘I didn’t say I didn’t suit you,’ Da Tian Ting denied.

‘You don’t need to admit the truth because my heart understands,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting smiled, held Feng Kai Ze’s hand and enjoyed the sunshine. But her good mood was dampened by Shang Duan Hua’s phone call.

Da Tian Ting didn’t want to answer Shang Duan Hua’s phone call. Why was a married man calling her? To brag? Her phone kept ringing. She decided to

answer to tell him off.

‘What are you doing calling me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Feng Kai Ze grabbed Da Tian Ting’s phone.

‘In the future, do not cause trouble or call my girlfriend again,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze hung up Da Tian Ting’s phone, and Da Tian Ting thought his jealous face looked cute.

Feng Kai Ze ignored Da Tian Ting’s smile mocking him.

‘In the future, stay far away from the troublesome Shang Duan Hua,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Not even to tell him off on the phone?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘It looks like I need to get you a new phone and change your number,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze wasn’t joking. He took Da Tian Ting to buy a new phone, and changed her phone number. She didn’t mind, because she didn’t want to stay in contact with Shang Duan Hua’s family or her uncle’s family.

On Shang Duan Hua’s end, Shang Duan Hua regretted marrying Da Ming Sheng. He thought Da Tian Ting brought Feng Kai Ze to the wedding to make him jealous. But in a short month, Da Tian Ting had gotten over him, and living a good with Feng Kai Ze. He didn’t want to accept Da Tian Ting ignored his existence after loving him for ten years.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 102

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
-

## ***Related***

[November 24, 2015 trungtnghuyen123](#)

UVB – Chapter 103

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapter 103



Shang Duan Hua gripped his phone. Da Tian Ting was gone from his life for more than a month. There was no one who bought his favorite food, clothes and shampoo. His life felt like a mess.

Da Tian Ting wasn’t beautiful. But Shang Duan Hua lived a good life with Da Tian Ting in his life.

In the morning Shang Duan Hua spat out the glass of water. His family’s assistants told him that they didn’t know what brand of bottle water Da Tian Ting usually bought him so they poured him the same bottled water his family drank.

Shang Duan Hua called Da Tian Ting to buy groceries for him. He didn’t expect Feng Kai Ze to pick up.

‘Duan Hua, what happened?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘Nothing,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Duan Hua hid his phone, because he didn’t want Da Ming Sheng to know he called Da Tian Ting.

‘Duan Hua, I found a dress I like,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Can you take me to go buy it?’

‘Didn’t you buy a new dress yesterday?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

When Shang Duan Hua was with Da Tian Ting, she took care of all his needs. But after he married Da Ming Sheng, Da Ming Sheng only knew how to spend money and dragged him to attend her friends’ parties.

Shang Duan Hua was frustrated doing everything Da Ming Sheng wanted to do. He wanted private time apart from Da Ming Sheng to do the things he liked.

‘The dress from yesterday isn’t the same dress I like today,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Duan Hua, take me shopping.’

‘Fine,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Let’s go,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng dragged Shang Duan Hua downstairs, and he noticed his parents sitting solemnly in the living room after his dad ended a phone call.

‘Dad, mum, what’s wrong?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

‘Dad, mum, Duan Hua is taking me shopping,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Dad, mum, do you want me to buy anything for either of you?’

‘Ming Sheng, you don’t need to go shopping every day,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘You’ve bought a mountain load of clothes already.’

‘Mum, this is a rare dress,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘There are only ten of them available in the city.’

‘Do you think the Shang family receives money from the sky?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘Mum...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Mum, what happened?’ Shang Duan Hua asked. ‘Mum, why are you venting your anger on Ming Sheng?’

‘Duan Hua, you shouldn’t be whipped by your wife like this,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘The Shang family will be penniless because of your wife.’

‘Mum, it’s one dress,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘One dress isn’t going to make us penniless.’

Lam Shu Pan glared at her useless shopaholic daughter-in-law.

‘I’m serious,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Your wife’s spending is out of control.’

Da Ming Sheng stood innocently beside Shang Duan Hua. She thought Lam Shu Pan was being unreasonable, because she only bought a couple of dresses each day.

Shang Duan Hua sat next to Lam Shu Pan on the sofa.

‘Mum, don’t be angry,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘You’ll grow old faster if you’re angry. Leave it me, I’ll deal with it.’

‘Duan Hua, our family circumstances aren’t the same as in the past,’ Lam Shu Pan said sadly.

Da Ming Sheng stood by herself, and felt it was unfair Lam Shu Pan made a fuss over a bit of money.

‘Dad, mum, tell me what happened,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Tian Qiang is the bank who has been loaning money to Shang’s company all these years,’ Shang Ming said. ‘The truth is Shang’s company has been making losses for years. If it wasn’t for Tian Qiang, Shang’s company would have been insolvent years ago. But a month ago, Tian Qiang stopped loaning money to Shang’s company.’

‘What?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

Shang Duan Hua had graduated years ago, but he didn’t have to work at Shang’s company so he didn’t know Shang’s company was in the red for years.

Da Ming Sheng thought the heavens were cruel to her. How could they let her marry into a poor family? She wanted to be the rich Mrs Shang, not the poor Mrs Shang.

Lam Shu Pan felt more frustrated looking at Da Ming Sheng’s useless face. She regretted choosing the wrong daughter-in-law.

‘Dad, why did Tian Qiang stop loaning Shang’s company money?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

‘They refused to take my calls and declined to see me when I went to their head bank,’ Shang Ming said. ‘I don’t know why either.’

‘Dad, if we find out the reason then we can save Shang’s company,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Duan Hua, come with me and see if you can find out the reason,’ Shang Ming said.

‘Yes dad,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Duan Hua, you promised you’ll take me shopping today,’ Da Ming Sheng sulked.

‘Ming Sheng, didn’t you hear dad and mum say Shang’s company is on the verge of bankruptcy?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

‘Duan Hua, take me shopping to buy the dress first,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I want to wear the dress to my friend’s birthday party tomorrow.’

‘Ming Sheng, I’m disappointed in you,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘I thought you’re an understanding person, but it turns out you’re only a materialistic person.’

Shang Duan Hua regretted marrying Da Ming Sheng. He wished he had married Da Tian Ting who was more understanding and hardworking than Da Ming Sheng.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 103

## Share this:

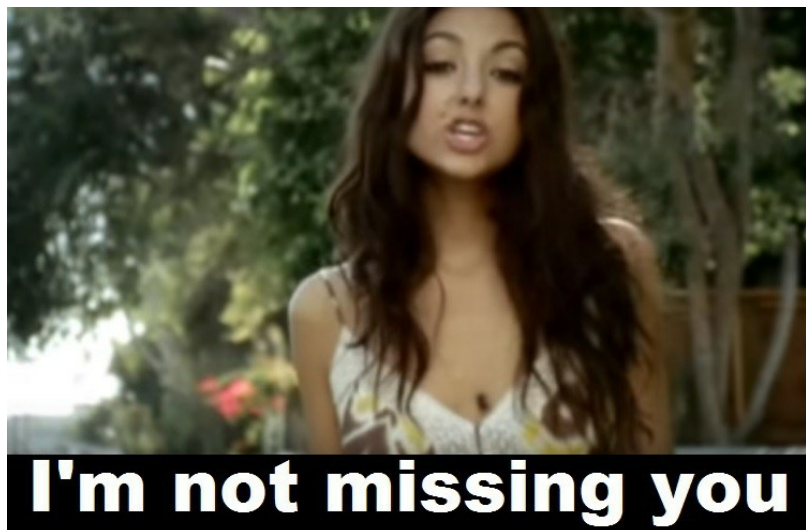
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 24, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 104

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 104



Da Ming Sheng was angry Shang Duan Hua left after Shang Ming filled him in on what was happening at Shang's company. She told all her friends, she was going to wear the rare dress to the birthday party. She didn't want to be the laughing stock at the birthday party.

Da Ming Sheng stayed at home to think of a way to buy the dress.

'Why didn't you go with Duan Hua to support him?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

'Mum...' Da Ming Sheng said.

Lam Shu Pan reflected on the past. She watched Da Tian Ting grow up. Why did she believe Da Ming Sheng over Da Tian Ting? Was she fooled by Da Ming Sheng?

'Today I feel sick,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'I'm going to bed to rest.'

Da Ming Sheng's lie about being sick when a moment ago Da Ming Sheng was healthy enough to go shopping confirmed that Lam Shu Pan had misunderstood



Da Tian Ting.

Lam Shu Pan gathered the assistants into the living room, and interrogated them properly.

‘That day did everyone actually see Tian Ting pouring hot water onto Ming Sheng’s arm?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘No,’ an assistant said.

‘Then what did everyone actually see?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘We only saw Miss Tian Ting holding the pot of hot water,’ the assistant said. ‘We didn’t see how young mistress’ arm was injured.’

‘Then all of you made me blame the wrong person!’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘We’ve misunderstood Tian Ting,’ Shang Ming said.

Shang Ming regretted he chose to believe Da Ming Sheng over Da Tian Ting.

‘I’m going to call Tian Ting to apologise,’ Shang Ming said.

‘It’s too late,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘I can’t look Tian Ting in the eye after all the hurtful things I said to her at the wedding.’

‘Even if we can’t look Tian Ting in the eye, we’re in the wrong and we need to apologise,’ Shang Ming said. ‘Da Zheng Li is punishing us from the grave for mistreating Tian Ting. I made a promise to Da Zheng Li that Duan Hua can’t inherit Shang’s company unless he marries Tian Ting. Tian Ting wouldn’t have ended the engagement if Duan Hua and Ming Sheng didn’t betray Tian Ting.’

‘Why didn’t you tell me this at the start?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘Have you forgotten that I opposed Duan Hua marrying Ming Sheng?’ Shang Ming asked. ‘It was you who asked me to let them marry each other.’

‘Shang Ming, do you think Tian Qiang refusing to loan money to Shang’s company is related to Duan Hua leaving Tian Ting and marrying Ming Sheng?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘It’s a possibility,’ Shang Ming said. ‘It’s too coincidental Tian Qiang cancelled Shang’s company’s bank loans on Duan Hua and Ming Sheng’s wedding day.’

‘What do we do now?’ Lam Shu Pan asked. ‘It’s all Da Zheng Li’s fault. Why

didn't he consider Duan Hua's feelings? He shouldn't have made you promise that Duan Hua would marry Tian Ting.'

'Lam Shu Pan, how can you still not see the reality?' Shang Ming asked. 'It's your son who wronged Tian Ting.'

'Duan Hua is innocent,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'He has the right to marry the woman he loves.'

'It's your son's fault from the start,' Shang Ming said. 'He should have been honest to Tian Ting from the start. Tian Ting would have understood, and she wouldn't have wasted her youth. How would you feel if you're Tian Ting, and your fiancé had an affair with your cousin the whole time you were engaged to your fiancé?'

'Stop preaching,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Right now we need to find a way to save Shang's company.'

'I want to ask Tian Ting to speak to Tian Qiang on our behalf,' Shang Ming said.

'Call Tian Ting now,' Lam Shu Pan said.

Shang Ming called Da Tian Ting's phone, but no one answered the phone.

'It looks like Tian Ting hates us enough not to answer our phone calls,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'We would hate ourselves if we're in Tian Ting's shoes,' Shang Ming said.

'What else can we do?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

'Wait for Duan Hua to find Tian Ting,' Shang Ming said.

'If Ming Sheng finds out Duan Hua is looking for Tian Ting, Ming Sheng will give us another headache,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Our home became chaotic the moment Ming Sheng stepped through the front door,' Shang Ming said.

Upstairs, Da Ming Sheng was busy counting her monthly allowance, it wasn't enough to buy the dress. She couldn't ask her parents for money. The only way for her to afford to buy the dress was by secretly pawning Lam Shu Pan's jewellery.

A world apart from Da Ming Sheng's money worries, Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze were having a fun date, shopping, eating and laughing together.

Da Tian Ting's old phone was in Feng Kai Ze's pocket. He switched off her old phone when Shang Ming called her old phone, because he didn't want the Shang family to hurt Da Tian Ting again.

Da Tian Ting was having fun going on rides with Feng Kai Ze.

'Little monkey, thank you for taking me to the amusement park,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I haven't had this much fun since I came here with my parents when I was a little girl.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 104

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 24, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 105

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 105



Da Ming Sheng waited for Shang Ming and Lam Shu Pan to take their habitual stroll in the garden. Then she looked for an alibi, an eighteen-year-old assistant, Xiao Yu who dropped out of school due to a poor family background.

‘Xiao Yu, did you come to clean the bathrooms?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘Yes young mistress,’ Xiao Yu said.

‘I’ll leave you to it,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng waited for Xiao Yu to clean Shang Ming and Lam Shu Pan’s bathroom. Then she casually walked into the bathroom.

‘Xiao Yu, I forgot to ask you,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘The pot plants in my bedroom haven’t been watered for days. Can you go water them for me?’

‘Yes young mistress,’ Xiao Yu said.

Xiao Yu walked to the shed to get a watering can, and Da Ming Sheng’s ransacked Lam Shu Pan’s vanity table drawers. Da Ming Sheng took out a diamond necklace from a box. Afterward she carefully used a tissue to wipe her

fingerprints, and put the empty box back in the drawer.

Da Ming Sheng returned to her bedroom, hid the diamond necklace under the bed and pretended to watch TV.

‘Young mistress, can I come in to water the pot plants?’ Xiao Yu asked.

‘Come in,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Xiao Yu walked to the pot plants. She was suspicious why Da Ming Sheng asked her to water the pot plants that looked like they were watered in the morning. But she didn’t want to lose her job so she watered the pot plants.

‘Young mistress, I’m done watering the pot plants,’ Xiao Yu said.

‘You can leave,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Yes young mistress,’ Xiao Yu said.

Da Ming Sheng locked the bedroom door after Xiao Yu left. Da Ming Sheng grabbed the diamond necklace from under the bed, and inspected it closely. Why did Shang Duan Hua lie to her? If his family was on the verge of bankruptcy then why did Lam Shu Pan buy an expensive diamond necklace? Shang Duan Hua must have put on an act with his parents to scare her so she wouldn’t spend their money. If they were selfish then she didn’t need to feel guilty about pawning the diamond necklace.

Da Ming Sheng put the diamond necklace in her handbag, and she calmly walked downstairs.

‘Young mistress, dinner is almost ready,’ an assistant said. ‘Where are you going?’

Da Ming Sheng gripped her handbag in case the diamond necklace fell out.

‘Tonight I’m meeting a friend for dinner to tell her I won’t be buying the rare dress she reserved for me,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Tell Duan Hua’s parents to eat dinner without me.’

‘Yes young mistress,’ the assistant said.

Da Ming Sheng took a taxi to the pawn shop. She also called a friend to eat dinner with her to be her alibi. She wished Da Tian Ting had visited the Shang

family home that evening, because she could have used Da Tian Ting to be her scapegoat if Lam Shu Pan asked her about the missing diamond necklace.

At the pawn shop, the owner was immune to seeing shady sellers like Da Ming Sheng.

‘Miss, what do you want to sell?’ the owner asked.

‘Boss, take a look at this diamond necklace,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘How much is it worth?’

‘One million dollars,’ the owner said.

‘Boss, we both know this diamond necklace is worth a lot more than one million dollars,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Miss, I need to make a living too,’ the owner said. ‘One million dollars is my highest offer. You can take it or leave it.’

‘Deal,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng accepted the cheque from the owner, she went to buy the rare dress and ate dinner with her friend.

The owner called his friends and bragged about hitting the jackpot.

‘Guess what?’ the owner asked a friend. ‘I paid one million dollars for a diamond necklace worth ten million dollars.’

At night, Da Ming Sheng returned home and saw everyone looking stiff in the living room. It made her worry that Lam Shu Pan found out about the missing diamond necklace while she went to pawn it.

‘Dad, mum, Duan Hua, what happened?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘Tian Qiang’s CEO refused to see Duan Hua too,’ Shang Ming said.

Da Ming Sheng was relieved no one found out about the missing diamond necklace. She sat next to Shang Duan Hua, and pretended to be a dutiful wife.

Shang Duan Hua forgave Da Ming Sheng’s tantrum after he heard an assistant inform him about Da Ming Sheng meeting a friend for dinner to tell her friend that she wouldn’t be buying the rare dress.

Lam Shu Pan didn’t want to be in the same room as her daughter-in-law.

‘I’m tired,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘I’m going to bed.’

Da Ming Sheng anxiously waited for Lam Shu Pan to unleash a storm.

A few minutes later, Lam Shu Pan returned to the living room like Da Ming Sheng expected.

‘My diamond necklace is missing,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Has anyone seen it?’

Da Ming Sheng acted surprised like everyone else.

‘Which diamond necklace?’ Shang Ming asked.

‘The diamond necklace that’s worth ten million dollars,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

Da Ming Sheng was startled the pawn shop owner fleeced her.

‘Mum, take another look for it,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘Perhaps you misplaced it somewhere.’

‘I always keep it safe in my vanity drawer,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘But the diamond necklace box is empty.’

Da Ming Sheng innocently followed everyone upstairs to help Lam Shu Pan look for the diamond necklace she pawned.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 105

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 24, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapter 106

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapter 106



Lam Shu Pan emptied all her vanity drawers, but she couldn’t find her diamond necklace.

‘Mum, when was the last time you wore the diamond necklace?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

‘I haven’t worn the diamond necklace for a long time,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Every night I always check if it’s in the box before I go to sleep.’

Shang Ming suspected someone stole Lam Shu Pan’s diamond necklace. Lam Shu Pan wouldn’t steal her own diamond necklace. Shang Duan Hua wasn’t an angel, but Shang Duan Hua loved Lam Shu Pan and wouldn’t steal it either. That left Da Ming Sheng.

Da Ming Sheng opened her mouth after she saw Shang Ming looked suspiciously at her.

‘Mum, do you remember when you last saw the diamond necklace?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘Last night before I went to sleep,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘That means it went missing today,’ Shang Ming said. ‘We’ll ask the assistants who they saw come into our room today.’



Da Ming Sheng panicked. She didn't know what Lam Shu Pan would do to her if Lam Shu Pan found out she stole the diamond necklace.

'It must be Xiao Yu,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Xiao Yu has a spare key to our room.'

'Mum, Xiao Yu is an honest worker, she wouldn't steal it...' Shang Duan Hua said.

'Duan Hua, go call Xiao Yu here,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Xiao Yu is the only person who has a spare key apart from you and your father.'

Shang Duan Hua went to get Xiao Yu, and he didn't notice the anxious look on Da Ming Sheng's face.

'Shu Pan, don't jump to conclusions without evidence,' Shang Ming said. 'Xiao Yu has been working here for a year. We both know she's an honest worker. I don't believe she stole your diamond necklace.'

'No one can see a person's heart,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Who else could steal it apart from Xiao Yu?'

'Dad, mum's right,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'It must be Xiao Yu.'

Shang Duan Hua returned with Xiao Yu, and Lam Shu Pan slapped Xiao Yu's face.

'You little bitch!' Lam Shu Pan said. 'You dare steal under my roof. I'm going to report you to the cops, and let you rot in jail.'

Xiao Yu held her sore and teary face.

'Mistress, I swear I didn't steal your diamond necklace,' Xiao Yu said.

'If you didn't steal it then who stole it?' Lam Shu Pan asked. 'My husband? It was you who cleaned my bathroom today. Give me back my diamond necklace!'

Xiao Yu knelt and begged Lam Shu Pan to believe her.

'Mistress, I didn't take your diamond necklace,' Xiao Yu said.

'Xiao Yu, admit the truth,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'Did you steal mum's diamond necklace when you cleaned the bathroom today?'

'It wasn't me,' Xiao Yu said.

‘Since you’re not going to give back my diamond necklace, I’m going to call the cops to arrest you,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Shu Pan, we don’t have evidence Xiao Yu stole your diamond necklace,’ Shang Ming said. ‘The cops won’t arrest Xiao Yu without evidence.’

‘What am I supposed to do?’ Lam Shu Pan asked. ‘Let the little bitch run off with ten million dollars?’

Da Ming Sheng was happy Xiao Yu took the fall.

‘Xiao Yu, if you stole my mum’s diamond necklace because your family needs help, I can help your family if you give it back to my mum,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Young master Shang, I didn’t take mistress’ diamond necklace,’ Xiao Yu said.

‘Go lock the little bitch in the storage room in the basement,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘She can stay in there until she gives back my diamond necklace.’

Xiao Yu held onto Lam Shu Pan’s leg.

‘Mistress, I’m telling the truth,’ Xiao Yu said. ‘I didn’t take your diamond necklace.’

Lam Shu Pan kicked Xiao Yu’s arms off her leg.

‘Shu Pan, it’s illegal to lock up someone,’ Shang Ming said.

‘She’s our employee,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘I have the right to punish her for stealing from her employer.’

‘Shu Pan!’ Shang Ming said.

‘Shut up!’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘I’m not going to let the little bitch run off with ten million dollars.’

‘What if Xiao Yu is innocent?’ Shang Ming asked. ‘Then you’re letting her take the fall for the real culprit.’

‘I...’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Dad, Xiao Yu is the only employee who has a spare key to yours and mum’s bedroom,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘No one is allowed to lock up Xiao Yu without evidence!’ Shang Ming said.

‘Shang Ming!’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Shut up!’ Shang Ming said. ‘Look at what a presumptuous person you’ve turned into.’

‘You!’ Lam Shu Pan said.

Shang Ming ignored Lam Shu Pan.

‘Xiao Yu, you’ll be confined in a guest room until my wife’s diamond necklace is found,’ Shang Ming said.

‘Master, thank you for believing me,’ Xiao Yu said.

‘Everyone get out!’ Lam Shu Pan said.

Da Ming Sheng followed everyone outside. She was lucky without Da Tian Ting around, there was still Xiao Yu to be her scapegoat.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 106

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 24, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapter 107

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapter 107



Several days after the diamond necklace theft, the Shang family assistants resigned because they heard what happened to Xiao Yu and rumors about Shang’s company going bust.

On the other hand, Da Tian Ting’s days were spent blissfully with Feng Kai Ze. She cherished the time they spent together, because her life was tough since her mother abandoned her and her father died.

On a weekend, Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting out to dinner at a fancy restaurant. She was dressed in a designer outfit he bought her, and was used to the envious looks from strangers.

‘Little monkey, when will you tell me your identity?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting felt it wasn’t right for her lover to hide his identity from her.

‘I’m Feng Kai Ze,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting didn’t want to pick up magazines to read about Feng Kai Ze’s family, because seeing things printed in black and white didn’t equate to the truth.

‘Of course I know you’re Feng Kai Ze,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘What I want to know is what you do for a living? Who are your family? What have you done in the last

sixteen years?’

‘You know I’m little monkey,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘That’s your childhood,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I want to know about the man eating dinner with me right now.’

‘I’m the same person,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Although I’m not the poor little monkey, little monkey had a happier life than I did in the last sixteen years. Tian Ting, if I lose it all, will you choose to stay with me?’

Da Tian Ting saw pain in Feng Kai Ze’s eyes so she didn’t press him to answer her questions. She was willing to wait for him to confide his secrets to her.

‘I, Da Tian Ting have always avoided rich people,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You don’t have to worry. The poorer you are the easier it is for me to accept being with you.’

‘If I don’t have a cent left, will you stay with me?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Yes,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s hand. He was scared making money was a mistake, and she would leave him after she found out how rich he was.

‘You can give all your money to me for safekeeping if you’re scared of wasting away your money,’ Da Tian Ting joked.

‘I’ll give you all my money,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Aren’t you scared I’ll run off with all your money?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘I find money for you to spend,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘My money is your money.’

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze was either crazy in love with her or just crazy. She hoped he was crazy in love with her.

‘What’s on your mind?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Money on my mind,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’m thinking about how much money is in your bank account.’

‘You can use all your brain cells to think about my bank balance,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘I don’t want to waste my brain cells,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze’s money wasn’t Da Tian Ting’s money, she didn’t need to waste her brain cells to guess his bank balance.

‘Are you full?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze had to find a way to eliminate Hong Shi’s company. He didn’t Da Tian Ting to doubt him if she heard lies about him being engaged to Hong Shi Na.

‘Yes,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Wait for me outside the door,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll go pay.’

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting walked outside the restaurant. She was used to Feng Kai Ze’s habit of paying for dinner.

‘Da Tian Ting, just be happy,’ Da Tian Ting encouraged herself.

Hong Shi Chi’s men were waiting outside the restaurant for a long time. The men dragged Da Tian Ting into the back seat of a car the moment she stood alone outside the restaurant.

‘Ah!’ Da Tian Ting screamed.

The men closed the door, and drove off before anyone on the streets heard Da Tian Ting’s scream.

‘Who are you people?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘What do you want?’

Two men restrained Da Tian Ting’s arms. She couldn’t jump out of the car even if she wanted to. What did they want? She was jobless. They wouldn’t kidnap her for money.

‘Shut up!’ a man said. ‘If you say another word, we’ll knock you unconscious.’

Da Tian Ting closed her mouth. She wanted to stay conscious, because it gave her hope of escaping.

Behind the car, Feng Kai Ze had ran out the restaurant, and took a taxi to follow the car that took Da Tian Ting. He felt the taxi driver drove slowly like the taxi driver didn’t want him to save Da Tian Ting.

‘Drive faster!’ Feng Kai Ze threatened.

‘Sir, I’m scared to drive faster,’ the taxi driver said.

‘Get out of the car!’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll drive.’

‘Sir, you can’t steal my car,’ the taxi driver said.

‘Wait for me at the police station,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll compensate you for borrowing your car.’

‘Wait...’ the taxi driver said.

Feng Kai Ze pushed the taxi driver out of the car at the red lights, and he sped in the direction he saw the kidnapper’s car took before it disappeared.

Feng Kai Ze was going to kill whoever kidnapped his fierce apple.

In the kidnapper’s car, the men let go of Da Tian Ting’s arms. She discreetly fumbled for the phone in her bag to call Feng Kai Ze.

A man noticed Da Tian Ting searching her bag. He snatched her bag, and took away her phone.

‘Don’t try anymore funny business if you want to live,’ the man warned.

‘Tell me where you’re taking me,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting couldn’t contact Feng Kai Ze. It meant she needed to stay strong, and find a way to escape.

‘You’ll find out soon,’ the man said.

Da Tian Ting thought about who would want to kidnap her. Was it Mac Kai An?

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 107

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
-

## ***Related***

[November 24, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)



## UVB – Chapter 108

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 108



The men dragged Da Tian Ting into a bar that Hong Shi Chi paid to vacate the premises.

Hong Shi Chi sat at a corner table. He wore a white suit, and held a glass of red wine in his hand. Men in black suits lined up behind him.

The men shoved Da Tian Ting's back, and she fell in front of Hong Shi Chi.

Da Tian Ting was wrong. Her kidnapper wasn't Mac Kai An. It was the man she hit with her suitcase.

'It's you,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I'm happy you remember me,' Hong Shi Chi said.

'Why did you bring me here?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'What do you want?'

'What do you think I'll do to you?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

'I don't know, I'm not you,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting should have listened to her advice to stay away from rich people, because insulting them only brought trouble into her life.

'You shouldn't have insulted and hit me with your suitcase,' Hong Shi Chi said.

Hong Shi Chi flicked the glass of red wine in his hand. The clink sound resounded in the quiet bar like an alarm at a fire station.

‘Now I know I shouldn’t have,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘It’s too late for you to be scared now,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘If everyone could predict the future then no one would do the wrong thing,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I like hearing your voice,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘Too bad I’m not going to spare you for insulting me.’

Hong Shi Chi threw the glass of red wine onto Da Tian Ting’s face. She closed her eyes, waited for the wine sting to wear off and held her tongue. She chose not to give him the satisfaction by reacting.

‘What happened to your potty mouth?’ Hong Shi Chi asked. ‘Why are you acting deaf and mute?’

Da Tian Ting wiped the wine off her face, and opened her eyes.

‘Vent out your anger so I can leave,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Today you look beautiful compared to the past,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘My brothers here love your beauty.’

‘What are you implying?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting took a step back, she wanted to escape. The two men behind her shoved her back, she couldn’t escape.

Hong Shi Chi put the empty glass on the table. He picked up a bottle of red wine, and poured it onto Da Tian Ting’s head. Then he signalled for one of his men to pass him another bottle of red wine.

Five empty bottles later, Da Tian Ting’s body was drenched in red wine, and her clothes clung to her body. But she didn’t move or make a sound.

‘I hope you liked the wine I chose for you,’ Hong Shi Chi said and laughed.

‘How juvenile,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Hong Shi Chi gripped Da Tian Ting’s chin.

‘I dare you to repeat what you said,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

Da Tian Ting turned her head to the side.

‘If you don’t make me happy today, I’ll make your life hell,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘What do you want?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting crossed her arms to cover her wet chest.

‘Your body isn’t worthy to clean my floor,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘My brothers here are not fussy like me.’ He smiled lecherously at his men. ‘My brothers, how long has it been since everyone got to play with a woman?’

‘Young master Hong, it’s been a long time,’ a man said. ‘This woman’s body looks fun to play with.’

‘You can be the first man to play with her,’ Hong Shi Chi said and sat back to enjoy the show.

Da Tian Ting’s survival instinct kicked in. She grabbed an empty bottle, smashed it on the table and used the jagged glass as a weapon to protect herself against the man moving toward her.

‘Don’t come near me!’ Da Tian Ting said.

The two men behind Da Tian Ting shoved her closer to the man. The man twisted her wrist, and the broken bottle fell out of her hand.

‘Ah!’ Da Tian Ting screamed.

The man grabbed Da Tian Ting’s waist.

‘Let go of me!’ Da Tian Ting said.

The man pulled Da Tian Ting’s hair.

‘Ah!’ Da Tian Ting screamed.

Hong Shi Chi leisurely drank a glass of red wine. Whoever insulted him was going to experience hell.

The man shoved Da Tian Ting onto the floor. She hit her head, and he began taking off her clothes.

Da Tian Ting was in pain. She crawled on her back, and silently called Feng Kai

Ze to come save her.

‘Stay away from me!’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Don’t touch me!’

Da Tian Ting crawled back into a corner. The man bent over her, and tore off the rest of her clothes.

Da Tian Ting kicked the man between his legs, he slapped her face and blacked out because Feng Kai Ze kicked his head.

Feng Kai Ze took off his shirt, wrapped it around Da Tian Ting’s naked body and he hugged her tightly.

‘Tian Ting, you’re safe,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m here now.’

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 108

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 25, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 109

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 109



Feng Kai Ze stopped the taxi on a dark street. He got out of the taxi, and looked around for Da Tian Ting. He spotted the kidnapper's car parked in front of a bar. He ran into the bar, and saw men in black suits ganging up on Da Tian Ting. He leapt and kicked the man who slapped Da Tian Ting's face.

Feng Kai Ze took off his shirt, covered Da Tian Ting's naked body and hugged her tightly.

'Tian Ting, you're safe,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I'm here now.'

Da Tian Ting heard Feng Kai Ze's voice, and she let her body shake.

'Little monkey, they're really scary,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I'm here,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You don't have to be scared. I'll make them pay

for scaring you.'

Feng Kai Ze helped Da Tian Ting stand. She saw Hong Shi Chi coming toward them, and she held onto Feng Kai Ze's waist.

'Hong Shi Chi, I'm going to make you pay tenfold for hurting my woman,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Feng Kai Ze, what do you want?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

Hong Shi Chi was startled Feng Kai Ze appeared out of nowhere. How dare Feng Kai Ze be with another woman who wasn't Hong Shi Na?

'I'm not free to deal with you today,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze led Da Tian Ting toward the door. He wanted to take her home, and comfort her.

'Don't let them leave!' Hong Shi Chi ordered.

Two men obstructed Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting's way.

Feng Kai Ze turned around, and gave Hong Shi Chi a warning look.

'Trust me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You can't handle the consequences if you provoke me.'

'Feng Kai Ze, other people are scared of you but I'm not,' Hong Shi Chi said. 'Today I'm going to teach you a lesson to get rid of your arrogance.'

'Do you think you can?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'I don't believe you can defeat my men,' Hong Shi Chi said.

'Little monkey, he's someone who has no heart,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Be careful.'

'Would you believe me if I said I'm going to kill all the men here today?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Little monkey, I don't want you to break the law,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I don't want you to be imprisoned or executed.'

Da Tian Ting needed Feng Kai Ze, she didn't need revenge.

'Today the men here broke the law,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'They kidnapped you, and assaulted you.'

‘But...’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I’m your man,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘It’s my duty to protect you. Let me take revenge for you.’

Da Tian Ting believed after the incident with Mac Kai An, Feng Kai Ze would find a way to take revenge without breaking the law.

‘Feng Kai Ze!’ Hong Shi Chi called. ‘How dare you be with another woman when you’re my little sister’s fiancé?’

Da Tian Ting let go of Feng Kai Ze, and took a step back.

‘Little monkey... do you have a fiancé?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting pressed a hand over her heart. Why did Feng Kai Ze play with her feelings when he had a fiancé? Why did her heart ached unbearably?

‘I don’t have a fiancé,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Then why did he say you’re his little sister’s fiancé?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘He’s nutty like his little sister,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘He’s desperate to marry off his nutty little sister. Don’t listen to his crazy talk.’

‘Feng Kai Ze!’ Hong Shi Chi yelled.

Feng Kai Ze ignored Hong Shi Chi.

‘Da Tian Ting, he is Hong Shi Na’s big brother, Hong Shi Chi,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Their whole family is deluded. Don’t believe anything that comes out of their mouths.’

‘Little monkey, they own Hong Shi’s company,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘We should stay away from them otherwise there’ll be trouble.’

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘There’ll be trouble for them.’

‘What?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Little monkey, are you saying you’re... Feng’s company’s Feng Kai Ze?’

‘Little dummy, I’ve told you from the start that I’m Feng Kai Ze so you can’t be upset with me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting didn’t know what to do. She fell in love with the richest heir in the

city. She wanted to back away, but she didn't want to leave Feng Kai Ze either.

'Da Tian Ting, don't leave me because I'm Feng's company's heir,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I've never acknowledged my father. I hate him, and his family.'

'Why?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'I hate my father for taking me away from my mother sixteen years ago,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'For sixteen years, I've opposed him. I won't acknowledge he's my father, I'm your little monkey. Da Tian Ting, don't leave me. You're my everything. If you leave me, my life is meaningless.'

'Little monkey,' Da Tian Ting called.

Da Tian Ting hugged Feng Kai Ze, and cried happy tears. She didn't expect there was someone in the world who saw her as their everything.

'Fierce apple, trust me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Everything I do is for us to be together.'

'Little monkey, I trust you,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting decided even if she had to walk on a thorny road, she wanted to walk it together with Feng Kai Ze.

'Don't scare me like this,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Don't think about leaving me again.'

'If you told me who you are sooner then you wouldn't be scared now,' Da Tian Ting said.

'If I told you sooner, I would have scared you off,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'It took me years to find you again. If you left me, I wouldn't know where to find you.'

'What are you scared of?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'It wouldn't matter where I run, because you'll always catch me.'

'You're right so don't think about leaving me because I'll catch you and bring you back home with me,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'What are you two doing being lovey dovey when you two are about to die?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

Feng Kai Ze ignored Hong Shi Chi.



‘Stand next to me and let me take care of the constipated man,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Little monkey, aren’t you scared Mr Hong will be upset if you call him a constipated man?’

‘I can destroy any constipated man even if he’s upset,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze wasn’t scared of anyone from Hong Shi’s company.

‘Little monkey, Mr Hong’s men outnumber the two of us,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting was a burden to Feng Kai Ze in her state of dress.

‘Mac Kai An hired more men,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘It’ll be a cinch for me to deal with these men.’

‘Are you saying you can defeat them with one phone call?’ Da Tian Ting asked. She picked up her phone and gave it to Feng Kai Ze. ‘You can use my phone.’

Feng Kai Ze was surprised how quick his fierce apple recovered her wits. He accepted her phone, and pressed the cops’ emergency phone number.

‘Little monkey, you’re calling the cops?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Feng Kai Ze, you’re not allowed to call the cops!’

‘I haven’t called the cops yet but it looks like your fear of cops cured your constipation,’ Feng Kai Ze mocked.

‘You dare play me?’ Hong Shi Chi asked.

‘Hong Shi Chi, even if you have ten lives, do you actually believe you can get away with threatening and assaulting an ordinary citizen,’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Without Hong Shi’s company backing you, you’re nothing.’

‘Feng Kai Ze, what about you?’ Hong Shi Chi asked. ‘Without Feng’s company, you’re nothing.’

‘In the near future, you’ll find out who’ll lose between us,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You only know how to bluff,’ Hong Shi Chi said and laughed.

Feng Kai Ze punched Hong Shi Chi’s smug face.

‘Ah!’ Hong Shi Chi cried out.

Hong Shi Chi covered his face, Feng Kai Ze kicked his stomach and he fell onto the floor.

‘This is a sample of your future,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze supported Da Tian Ting to the taxi.

‘Young master Hong, what are we going to do?’ a man asked.

‘Everyone needs to keep their mouths shut about what happened today,’ Hong Shi Chi warned.

Hong Shi Chi would be a public laughing stock if the media found out he lost to Feng Kai Ze. He was going to think of a way to slowly torture Feng Kai Ze to death.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 109

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 25, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 110

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter 110



Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting back to the apartment hotel. She showered, changed clothes and sat in front of the vanity table. She felt like the day was a nightmare.

If Feng Kai Ze didn't save Da Tian Ting in time, Hong Shi Chi's men would have raped her. Hong Shi Chi wasn't worthy to be called a human, he was a lowlife pig who deserved to be roasted in hell.

Da Tian Ting cursed Hong Shi Chi then she thanked him for helping her find out Feng Kai Ze's identity. She didn't care Feng Kai Ze was the heir of Feng's company, she was going to stay with him as long as he cared about her.

Da Tian Ting thought about how happy Feng Kai Ze were together, and she smiled.

'That's not right!' Da Tian Ting said to the mirror.

'What's not right?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze walked into Da Tian Ting's bedroom to comfort her after her ordeal, and he heard her mumbling to herself.

Da Tian Ting stood, turned around and pointed a finger at Feng Kai Ze's face.

'Feng Kai Ze, confess,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Did you force my former workplace to fire me, and stopped other companies from hiring me?'

'Yes,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Feng Kai Ze, how can you say you love me by making me jobless?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Hey,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'It's you who ran to work when you were recovering after falling into a lake. Besides, if you're still working at Tian Chen's company, you'll be embarrassed to have me pursue you during work hours.'

'Why are you so unreasonable?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'If it's got to do with us being together, nothing is unreasonable,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'If you want us to be together, you can't interfere with my job hunting again,' Da Tian Ting negotiated.

Feng Kai Ze hugged Da Tian Ting and smiled at her.

'You're job right now is focusing on being my girlfriend and strengthening our bond,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'How can you consider it a legitimate job?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting felt Feng Kai Ze was hiding many secrets from her. What if one day he disappeared without warning? She was falling in love with him more each day. If that day happened, how would her heart heal?

'Tell me what you consider a legitimate job?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'A job that pays money,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I don't live for money. I only want to work to make a living enough to support myself and I'm happy.'

'I love your straight forwardness,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Don't change the topic,' Da Tian Ting said.

‘If your job is to find money then I’ll find money to give to you and you’ll be happy,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘It’s not the same,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Your money is your money. My money is my money.’

‘I told you, I only find money for you to spend,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘I can’t reason with you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘You don’t need to job hunt,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Whatever job you’ll find, you’ll be treated like a slave.’

‘But...’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting thought Feng Kai Ze was partially right. She didn’t have a career ambition. She was happy to work any job to make a living.

‘I’m going to give you fifty percent of Hong Shi’s company shares and you’ll be their biggest shareholder,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘What?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Little monkey, I don’t need to be in control of Hong Shi’s company.’

‘This is the high price Hong Shi Chi has to pay for hurting you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m using your name to buy fifty percent of Hong Shi’s company’s shares, and Hong Shi Chi has to bow down to you.’

‘Little monkey, you don’t need to be this scary,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Do I look scary?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Little monkey, you can turn your back on someone faster than an assassin killing their victim,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tian Ting, trust me that I’ll always love you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Don’t ever doubt that I love you.’

‘Little monkey, what secrets are you hiding from me to make you scared I won’t trust you?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Trust me that everything I do is for us to be together,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I only want to give you a happy life.’

‘If you love on me this much, aren’t you scared I’ll sit on your head?’ Da Tian

Ting asked.

‘I don’t mind if you sit on me head,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze stared at Da Tian Ting’s lips.

‘Why are you staring at me?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘You’re making me feel shy.’

‘Because you’re beautiful,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting closed her eyes, and anticipated Feng Kai Ze’s kiss.

When Feng Kai Ze’s lips almost touched Da Tian Ting’s lips, someone knocked on the front door.

Feng Kai Ze went to open the front door to meet the unlucky person who interrupted him kissing Da Tian Ting.

An anxious concierge stood behind the front door.

‘Sir, madam, you need to leave right now,’ the concierge said. ‘Your lives are at peril.’

‘Peril?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Why?’

‘Sir, you offended Mac Kai An,’ the concierge said. ‘She’s back with a big wig to take revenge on you and your girlfriend. Come with me quickly, I’ll take you two to escape through the back entrance.’

The concierge helped Da Tian Ting pack her belongings into her suitcase. She couldn’t believe after dealing with the Hong Shi Chi pig, Mac Kai An returned with vengeance.

‘It’s OK,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I want to see what she wants to do.’

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s hand, and they walked to the lobby together. His strong hand helped ease her anxiety. Besides, she knew his real identity. It was Mac Kai An who should be scared of him.

The concierge helplessly followed the two foolish guests to the lobby.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 110

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 25, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 111

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter 111



Note: Chapter 111 has mature content.

### Chapter 111

Mac Kai An wore another skimpy strapless dress that showed off her big chest. She sat on the sofa in the lobby, and hooked her legs around Wu Tong's legs.

'Wu Tong, today you need to take revenge for me if you want me to keep taking care of you,' Mac Kai An said.

Everyone else in the lobby got goosebumps listening to Mac Kai An's scary sweet tone of voice.

'I came here with you to help you take revenge,' Wu Tong said.

Wu Tong put his hands down Mac Kai An's dress and rubbed her breasts. If he had a condom on him, he would have pulled down his pants and taken her on the sofa. Having an audience made him friskier.

'Um... Wu Tong, you're so manly,' Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An rubbed her body against Wu Tong's body. She didn't mind using her body to get Wu Tong to take revenge for her.

'In the future remember to say my nickname to anyone who dares offend you,'



Wu Tong said.

Wu Tong groaned on Mac Kai An's neck.

'What's your nickname?' Mac Kai An asked.

'Feng's company,' Wu Tong said.

'Um... Wu Tong, you're so good to me,' Mac Kai An said. 'Do I only need to say Feng's company and no one will dare to offend me?'

Mac Kai An thought with someone from Feng's company, Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting were doomed.

'I'm someone from Feng's company, there's nothing I can't do,' Wu Tong said.

Wu Tong spoke like he owned Feng's company.

'Um... then I'll remember to say your nickname,' Mac Kai An said.

Mac Kai An rubbed her chest against Wu Tong's chest.

Everyone in the lobby including the security guards thought poorly of the fallen star Mac Kai An. All their female colleagues were classier than Mac Kai An.

'Miss Mac, the two guests have returned their rooms,' an assistant informed.

'Go check each room to make sure!' Mac Kai An ordered.

'Yes Miss Mac,' the assistant said.

The assistant turned around and saw Feng Kai Ze standing with his arm wrapped around Da Tian Ting's waist. The assistant immediately went to hide in a corner, because the assistant didn't want to be involved in harming two innocent people.

Mac Kai An jumped off Wu Tong's body, and pointed at Feng Kai Ze.

'Wu Tong, it's him who offended me,' Mac Kai An said. 'Wu Tong, I want you to teach him a lesson so he won't dare to be arrogant again.'

Wu Tong saw Feng Kai Ze, and his two legs wobbled. Wu Tong was scared to stand on his wobbly legs.

Mac Kai An didn't notice Wu Tong's fear of Feng Kai Ze.

'Today I'm going to make you two suffer,' Mac Kai An said.

Feng Kai Ze smiled menacingly at Wu Tong.

‘Are you the big wig?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

If Feng Kai Ze didn’t know who Wu Tong was then Wu Tong wasn’t a big wig. The fear on Wu Tong’s face confirmed his logic.

‘You dare offend someone from Feng’s company?’ Mac Kai An asked.

Da Tian Ting couldn’t hold in her laughter. She laughed because Mac Kai An was threatening the heir of Feng’s company. In the past, she would have been scared of offending someone from Feng’s company. But her boyfriend was Feng Kai Ze, he was more scared of upsetting her.

‘She knows how to joke,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘I agree,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Wu Tong stood, and turned Mac Kai An around to face him.

‘Wu Tong, why aren’t you saying anything?’ Mac Kai An asked. ‘Didn’t you say you came here to help me take revenge?’

Everyone heard Wu Tong’s teeth chattered.

‘Wu Tong, what’s wrong?’ Mac Kai An asked.

‘I...’ Wu Tong said.

Wu Tong’s wobbly legs couldn’t support his fear, and he took a tumble.

Mac Kai An helped Wu Tong stand.

‘Wu Tong, are you OK?’ Mac Kai An asked.

Wu Tong regained his balance and shoved Mac Kai An away from him.

‘You feral woman, get lost!’ Wu Tong said.

‘Ah...’ Mac Kai An said. She fell on the sofa. ‘Wu Tong, what happened?’

Mac Kai An thought she wasted her body on the coward Wu Tong last night.

Wu Tong wobbled toward Feng Kai Ze, and apologised profusely.

‘Young master Feng, I’m really sorry,’ Wu Tong said. ‘I didn’t know. Forgive me, I’m really sorry.’

Mac Kai An stood, and looked fearfully at Feng Kai Ze.

‘Are you... Feng Kai Ze?’ Mac Kai An asked.

‘Yes,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘He’s Feng Kai Ze.’

Mac Kai An sat on the floor. She offended Feng’s company’s heir. Her life was over.

‘Young master Feng, I swear I didn’t know this woman offended you,’ Wu Tong said. ‘If I knew, I wouldn’t dare come here today.’

‘What’s your position at Feng’s company?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I’m the manager of the cleaning department,’ Wu Tong said.

Mac Kai An leaned on the wrong man. She dug herself a deeper hole.

‘Disappear right now or I’ll make you disappear forever,’ Feng Kai Ze said to Wu Tong.

Wu Tong, his men and Mac Kai An’s two assistants ran out of the apartment hotel.

Mac Kai An admitted defeat. She knelt in front of Feng Kai Ze.

‘Mr Feng, I’m sorry,’ Mac Kai An said. ‘Have mercy on me, and forgive me.’

Feng Kai Ze ignored Mac Kai An.

‘Tian Ting, we should go back to the city before the paparazzi arrive,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I want to go back to the city too.’

‘Don’t tell me you want to go back to the city to see Shang Duan Hua,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Little monkey, I lived in the city for more than ten years,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Besides Shang Duan Hua, I have friends in the city like Xiao Ran who you met in person. I can’t change who my uncle is. But my uncle has always loved me like a daughter. I want to see him on his birthday to give him a birthday gift.’

‘As long as you’re not seeing Shang Duan Hua, I’ll take you wherever you want to go,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Let’s go shopping to buy your uncle a birthday gift.’

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting walked to the car together and they left Mac Kai An kneeling on the lobby floor.

Mac Kai An’s dug a hole too deep. She accepted it was impossible for her to get back her star status.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 111

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 25, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 112

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 112



Hong Shi Chi was in a shitty mood by the time he returned home from Gu Wen.

‘Big brother, did you find Kai Ze for me?’ Hong Shi Na asked.

Hong Shi Na missed Feng Kai Ze. She called Yang Fei’s phone every day since she left Feng Kai Ze’s apartment, but Yang Fei didn’t know where Feng Kai Ze was staying. She regretted her direct approach scared off Feng Kai Ze.

‘Don’t mention the MF’s name in front of me again,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

Hong Shi Chi picked up a small sculpture and used it to break the glass coffee table. His family and the servants hadn’t seen him angry to that extent before.

‘Shi Chi, what happened?’ Hong Tian Fang asked. ‘Why are you this angry?’

‘Dad, do you know what Feng Kai Ze’s net worth is?’ Hong Shi Chi asked. ‘Who does he think he is? How dare he hit me? What makes me angrier is that he’s with another woman, and he declared in front of many people that he wouldn’t

marry Shi Na. He's going to make us a public laughing stock if he doesn't marry Shi Na.'

Hong Shi Chi omitted the truth about him kidnapping Da Tian Ting, and his men's failed attempt to gang rape Da Tian Ting.

'Big brother, you already know Kai Ze has a girlfriend,' Hong Shi Na said. 'Why are you still angry?'

'I'm angry because... Feng Kai Ze insulted me and his girlfriend dared to hit me that day I went to meet you at Feng Kai Ze's apartment.'

'Oh...' Hong Shi Na said.

'I went to teach that woman a lesson but I didn't expect she's Feng Kai Ze's girlfriend,' Hong Shi Chi said.

'Why are you angry over a woman?' Hong Tian Fang asked. 'What an embarrassment. I don't believe she would hit you for no reason.'

'Dad, why are you taking an outsider's side?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

'Shi Chi, I'm your dad,' Hong Tian Fang said. 'I know how your brain ticks. You've only told me a half truth. Confess, what did you do in the last two days?'

'Dad... I went to help Shi Na find Feng Kai Ze,' Hong Shi Chi said. 'Feng Kai Ze hit me. I didn't expect to come home, and have my dad lecture me.'

'Big brother, I remembered you said you went out to teach someone a lesson,' Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Tian Fang noticed the dagger Hong Shi Chi gave Hong Shi Na.

'Shi Chi, if you keep making a public spectacle of yourself, sooner or later Hong Shi's company will be destroyed in your hands,' Hong Tian Fang said.

'Dad, I just went to teach someone a lesson,' Hong Shi Chi said. 'Hong Shi's company isn't going to fall apart because I taught one person a lesson.'

'Shi Chi, I know how you operate,' Hong Tian Fang said. 'The way you teach someone a lesson, you're bound to break many laws. One day, you'll mess with the wrong person who'll sue Hong Shi's company for compensation because of you. Even without someone suing you, your bad reputation isn't doing you any

favours. How do you expect the executives at Hong Shi's company to support you as their CEO after I retire?'

'Dad, who cares what a bunch of old fuddy-duddies thinks of me,' Hong Shi Chi asked.

'Shi Chi, do you know what you've done now?' Hong Tian Fang asked. 'You've offended Feng Kai Ze and Feng Jia Yong. They're not small fries. You've put Hong Shi's company under jeopardy.'

'Dad, Feng Kai Ze is just a second generation like me,' Hong Shi Chi said. 'You don't need to be scared of him. Soon Hong Shi's company will surpass Feng's company...'

Hong Tian Fang slapped Hong Shi Chi's face, and spurred on Hong Shi Chi's anger.

Hong Shi Na knew Hong Tian Fang was angrier than usual, because Hong Tian Fang rarely hit Hong Shi Chi.

'If you continue to behave irresponsibly like this, get out of my home!' Hong Tian Fang said. 'I don't need a son like you.'

'Dad, why are you scared of Feng's company?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

Hong Shi Chi wouldn't accept losing to anyone.

'Shi Chi, you only have a narrow perspective,' Hong Tian Fang said. 'Do you know why Feng Jia Yong wants Feng Kai Ze to marry Shi Na?'

'Isn't it money marrying money?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

'It's not a simple case of pedigree,' Hong Tian Fang said. 'Feng Kai Ze is nearly thirty. If Feng Jia Yong cared about pedigree then he would have forced Feng Kai Ze to marry Shi Na years ago.'

'Then why does Feng Jia Yong want Feng Kai Ze to marry Shi Na?' Hong Shi Chi asked.

'I don't know,' Hong Tian Fang said. 'But my intuition tells me, Feng Jia Yong wants to take control of Hong Shi's company.'

'Dad, if that's true then we can't let Shi Na marry Feng Kai Ze,' Hong Shi Chi

said.

‘Shi Na, I don’t want you to have a loveless marriage with Feng Kai Ze and for Hong Shi’s company to be under Feng Jia Yong’s control,’ Hong Tian Fang said.

‘Dad, I love Kai Ze,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘Dad, help me to marry Kai Ze.’

‘Shi Na, I can’t make Feng Kai Ze marry you,’ Hong Tian Fang said. ‘You’ve heard Feng Kai Ze turned you down.’

‘I don’t care,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘Kai Ze’s father promised me that Kai Ze will marry me. I’m going to be Kai Ze’s wife!’

Hong Shi Na ran to her bedroom. She was going to be Feng Kai Ze’s wife, and no one was going to stand in her way.

‘Dad, perhaps you’re wrong,’ Hong Shi Chi said. ‘Even if Shi Na marries Feng Kai Ze, we’re Hong Shi Chi’s biggest shareholder so I’ll be managing Hong Shi’s company after you retire.’

‘Feng Jia Yong will find a way to make Shi Na to be Hong Shi’s company’s successor,’ Hong Tian Fang said.

‘Dad, that’s impossible,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

‘Shi Chi, you don’t need to worry about Shi Na marrying Feng Kai Ze,’ Hong Tian Fang said. ‘If Feng Jia Yong can find a way to control Hong Shi’s company then I can find a way to control Feng’s company.’

‘Dad, if that’s true then we don’t need to bow down to anyone anymore,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

Hong Shi Chi anticipated the day he’d get to see Feng Kai Ze begging at his feet.

‘Shi Chi, you need to look at the big picture,’ Hong Tian Fang said. ‘You need to repair your reputation, study and gain business experience if you want things to work out your way.’

‘Dad, I understand what I need to do,’ Hong Shi Chi said.

Hong Tian Fang shook his head. He wished Hong Shi Chi was at least half the man Feng Kai Ze was. Hong Tian Fang would be a proud father if Feng Kai Ze was



his son instead of Hong Shi Chi.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 112

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 25, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 113

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 113



Shang Duan Hua spent days looking for Da Tian Ting. It was like she disappeared without a trace. Even Ding Xiao Ran hadn't seen or heard from Da Tian Ting.

Where did Da Tian Ting go if she didn't have a family or a home?

Shang Duan Hua felt the effects of Da Tian Ting's absence in his life. In the past he took Da Tian Ting for granted, she did everything to take care of him.

Shang Duan Hua regretted choosing Da Ming Sheng over Da Tian Ting because he used to only value appearances. After living with Da Ming Sheng, her obsession with maintaining her appearances, and going to her friends' parties to brag annoyed him. Da Ming Sheng did nothing to take care of him. Even during a crisis, Da Ming Sheng still selfishly spent money to maintain her appearances.

Shang Duan Hua regretted how in the past he took Da Ming Sheng everywhere

to socialise while he hid Da Tian Ting, because he was embarrassed to be seen in public with an old maid like Da Tian Ting. Back then he had the best of both worlds, someone to take care of him and someone to show off to his friends.

Shang Duan Hua didn't appreciate Da Tian Ting until he lost her. He regretted how he mistreated her. He shouldn't have called her worthless or left her to fend for herself without a family or a home.

Lam Shu Pan walking into the living room, and sat next to Shang Duan Hua on the sofa.

'Duan Hua, lately you always look troubled,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'What's troubling you?'

'Mum, I can't find Tian Ting,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'I don't know where she is.'

'I think she's moved out of the city,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Tomorrow is Da Qing Feng's birthday. He's her uncle. She'll visit him tomorrow to wish him a happy birthday.'

'Mum, what did you say?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

'Tomorrow's Da Qing Feng's birthday,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'How come you didn't know? He's Ming Sheng's father, she should have told you. He's your father-in-law, tomorrow you need to go see him.'

'Mum, Ming Sheng didn't tell me,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'Did she forget her own father's birthday?'

'Last year I found out from Tian Ting about Da Qing Feng's birthday because she asked me to help her prepare a birthday dinner for him,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'What sort of person is Ming Sheng to shop all day, and forget about her own father's birthday?'

'Mum, did I choose to marry the wrong person?' Shang Duan Hua asked. 'Ming Sheng disappointed me. I'm only staying with Ming Sheng out of duty. I can't stop thinking about Tian Ting. Mum, I'm tired of living with Ming Sheng. Ming Sheng doesn't do anything to take care of me, she's always shopping and partying with her friends.'

'I'm tired of Ming Sheng too,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'She doesn't act like a wife or

a daughter-in-law. She's done nothing for our family. She only comes home to eat or sleep.'

'Mum, perhaps if we give her time, she'd settle into our family and be a dutiful wife and daughter-in-law,' Shang Duan Hua said.

'Shang's company will be bankrupt before she's a dutiful wife and daughter-in-law,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Mum, dad finally has a meeting with Tian Qiang's CEO,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'I believe dad will find a way to save Shang's company.'

'Duan Hua, I forgot to tell you,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'There's a big possibility Tian Ting didn't pour hot water on Ming Sheng's arm that day.'

'Mum, how is that possible?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

If it was true then Shang Duan Hua had misunderstood Da Tian Ting, and it was wrong of him to throw tea at Da Tian Ting's face.

'Several days ago I asked the former kitchen assistants about what they actually saw that day,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'They said they only saw Da Tian Ting hold the pot of hot water, and they didn't see her pour it on Ming Sheng's arm.'

'Mum, who do you believe?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

'We've been deceived by Ming Sheng's looks and wrongly accused Tian Ting,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Mum, I think I misunderstood Tian Ting a second time,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'Before the wedding, I saw Tian Ting scolding Ming Sheng at a restaurant and I thought she threw hot coffee onto Ming Sheng's body. Mum, I'm going back to the restaurant to ask them to let me see footage from that day.'

Shang Duan Hua stood, grabbed the car key and strode to the car with purpose.

'Duan Hua...' Lam Shu Pan called.

Lam Shu Pan sighed. She had chosen the wrong daughter-in-law.

The wrong daughter-in-law was having fun shopping with her friends.

'Ming Sheng, today you bought so many things,' the first friend said. 'Where

are you going to put it all?’

‘That’s right,’ the second friend said. ‘Mrs Shang, why don’t you give us some of the things you bought?’

‘Everyone can choose something from my shopping bags,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng’s friends dug into her shopping bags to select something they wanted.

‘We’re out in public,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘We shouldn’t act tacky.’

‘There’s nothing tacky about receiving a gift from a friend,’ the first friend said.

Da Ming Sheng was happy to show off in front of her friends. She noticed a beautiful couple shopping in the shopping mall. Da Tian Ting? Impossible.

Da Ming Sheng looked closely at the couple. It was Da Tian Ting and the man Da Tian Ting took to the wedding. Da Ming Sheng thought he was Da Tian Ting’s fake boyfriend. But the way Da Tian Ting and the man looked lovingly at each other made Da Ming Sheng jealous. Da Ming Sheng wasn’t going accept Da Tian Ting found a better man than Shang Duan Hua and living a happier life than her life.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 113

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 25, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 114

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 114



Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting shopping for Da Qing Feng's birthday gift. They walked into a men's clothing shop, and browsed through men's winter clothes.

Da Tian Ting wanted to buy a winter coat for Da Qing Feng. Thinking about how Da Qing Feng wore the same old clothes to work while Da Ming Sheng had a full wardrobe made Da Tian Ting angry. How could Da Ming Sheng be such an unfilial daughter toward Da Qing Feng who made sacrifices to give Da Ming Sheng a comfortable life?

'Brat!' Da Tian Ting cursed.

'Are you cursing me?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'No,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I'm cursing Da Ming Sheng,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I've lived in my uncle's home since I was eighteen. Da Ming Sheng only cares about her looks. She's an ungrateful daughter who spends uncle's money to buy clothes and makeup for herself. She never once gave uncle a birthday gift. If uncle couldn't afford to buy her something, she'd curse uncle. Thinking about what an unfilial daughter she is makes me angry.'

'Are you angry at her for being an unfilial daughter or because she stole your

fiance?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Feng Kai Ze!’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze smiled at Da Tian Ting.

‘Pretend I didn’t say anything,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘If you think I have lingering feelings for the lowlife Shang Duan Hua then let’s break up,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tian Ting, I’m a little jealous,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Don’t be angry at me. Forget about the joke I made before.’

‘I was joking too,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Let’s not joke about breaking up again,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘We won’t,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Help me find a winter coat for uncle.’

‘Doesn’t your uncle own a coat?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Uncle has worn the same clothes for ten years,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I want to buy uncle a winter coat, a sweater, a vest and other warm clothes. Since it’s uncle’s birthday, he has to accept my gifts.’

Da Tian Ting chose the best quality warm clothes for Da Qing Feng.

‘Tian Ting, I know you have a good heart and you only want to buy warm clothes for you uncle,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘But he’s not your father. Da Ming Sheng will only resent you for making her look bad compared to you.’

‘Da Ming Sheng said the same thing to me too,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ve considered her selfish feelings so I’ve only bought uncle small gifts for his past birthdays. She had always forgotten uncle’s birthday, and she never gave uncle a birthday gift.’

‘Is that why you want to buy your uncle the best quality clothes for his birthday this year?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘The most important reason is uncle’s advanced age,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Every year winter is getting colder, and uncle’s body isn’t young as it used to be. I can’t rely on Da Ming Sheng to be considerate enough to buy uncle warm clothes. I don’t care about Da Ming Sheng’s selfish feelings anymore. Uncle’s health is

more important.'

'OK,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I'll help you choose warm clothes for your uncle.'

Feng Kai Ze picked up a thick winter coat, sweater and vest.

'Tian Ting, what do you think about this winter coat, sweater and vest?' Feng Kai Ze asked. 'It's thick and the style suits your uncle's age. It's durable and it'll keep your uncle warm during winter.'

Da Tian Ting touched the winter coat, sweater and vest.

'Wow,' Da Tian Ting said. 'You're right. The fabric is thick and soft. It'll keep uncle warm during winter.'

'Let's buy these warm clothes for your uncle,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'OK,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I want to get two of this winter coat for uncle.'

Later a shop assistant approached Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze to help them carry the clothes.

'Sir, madam, do you need my help?' the shop assistant asked.

'Yes,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Can you wrap...'

'Big sister, is that you?' Da Ming Sheng interrupted. 'What a coincidence. Big sister, are you here to buy clothes for your boyfriend?'

Da Ming Sheng checked out Feng Kai Ze. The last time she saw him was on her wedding day. On closer inspection, she thought he looked like a rich attractive man. If she was married to him instead of Shang Duan Hua, she would feel proud to show him off to her friends.

Feng Kai Ze ignoring Da Ming Sheng made her want to explode, but she acted civil because she was out in public.

'What are you doing here?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Big sister, this is a shopping mall, of course I came here to shop,' Da Ming Sheng said.

'Then don't shop in the same shop as me,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Stay away from me, and stop scheming to harm to me.'



Da Tian Ting ignored Da Ming Sheng, and passed the warm clothes to the shop assistant.

‘Can you wrap these clothes for me?’ Da Tian Ting asked the shop assistant.

‘Yes madam,’ the shop assistant said.

Da Ming Sheng snatched the two winter coats from the shop assistant’s hands.

‘The fabric of this winter coat is good quality,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Duan Hua will love this winter coat. Give me these two winter coats.’

‘Miss, this lady asked me to wrap these two winter coats for her before you...’ the shop assistant said.

‘These two winter coats haven’t been bought yet so no one owns them,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Give me these two winter coats.’

‘Da Ming Sheng!’ Da Tian Ting called. ‘Starting from today, I won’t let you steal anything from me. These two winter coats belong to me. Give them back to me.’

‘Big sister, you haven’t paid for them so you don’t own them,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I’m buying these two winter coats.’

‘Da Ming Sheng, stop being shameless,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Da Tian Ting, everyone hates you,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng and Da Tian Ting played tug of war with the two expensive winter coats.

‘Miss, madam, I can go get another two winter coats,’ the shop assistant said. ‘There is no need to fight over these two winter coats.’

‘No!’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I want these two winter coats!’

‘Da Ming Sheng!’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You always want to steal everything from me. I’m not going to let you steal from me again. Give back my winter coats.’

‘I always get what I want,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I want these two winter coats.’

Da Ming Sheng tugged harder, the two winter coats ripped in half, Feng Kai Ze braced Da Tian Ting’s fall and Da Ming Sheng fell onto the floor.

‘Ah!’ Da Ming Sheng cried out.

Da Tian Ting saw Da Ming Sheng took a hard fall, and she remembered Da Ming Sheng told her that Da Ming Sheng was pregnant before the wedding.

‘Little monkey, call the ambulance,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Why?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘She only fell.’

‘Da Ming Sheng’s pregnant,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘We need to help her save her baby. Little monkey, call the ambulance.’

Da Tian Ting would never forgive herself if she caused Da Ming Sheng to miscarry because of two winter coats.

Feng Kai Ze would have called the ambulance if he didn’t notice there was no blood on the floor where Da Ming Sheng was sitting.

‘She’s not pregnant,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Ming Sheng took a hard fall. She would have miscarried if she was pregnant. But Feng Kai Ze suspected she faked a pregnancy, and at most would only have a twisted ankle.

Da Tian Ting noticed Da Ming Sheng wasn’t acting like someone scared about having a miscarriage. Da Ming Sheng was looking at the damaged winter coats instead of checking if there was blood between her legs. Da Ming Sheng lied about being pregnant!

‘Da Ming Sheng, how can you lie to me about being pregnant?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘You’re not pregnant.’

Da Ming Sheng looked at the damaged winter coats then she looked at her swollen ankle. But she panicked after she realised Da Tian Ting found out the truth about her not being pregnant. She lied about being pregnant so she could steal Da Tian Ting’s wedding day and marry Shang Duan Hua. She regretted her fake pregnancy being exposed because of two winter coats.

‘Da Ming Sheng, aren’t you ashamed of your lies to get what you want?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘You burned your own arm, you poured hot coffee on your body and lied about being pregnant just to steal everything from me.’

‘It’s you who is shameless!’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘If your dead father didn’t

force Duan Hua to be your fiancée, Duan Hua wouldn't want to be engaged to you. You lived in my home for ten years, and you stole my father's love.'

If Da Tian Ting found out the truth then Da Ming Sheng wanted to humiliate Da Tian Ting.

'Da Ming Sheng, you're not even worthy to say my father's name,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Without my father, Shang's company wouldn't exist and you wouldn't be the rich Mrs Shang junior right now. You say I stole your father's love. But have you asked yourself if you care about your father? You've burned your father's money, graduated for three years but lived off your father's money. You've never once bought a gift for your father. You only know how to shop, look good and show off to your friends. Have you ever taken care of your father when he's sick? While your father worked to support you, you were busy sleeping with my ex-fiance. Can you say after you've become Mrs Shang junior that you returned to your father's home to visit him?'

'Don't be deluded,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'If your father is such a good man then why did your mother run off with another man? My relationship with my father is none of your business. My father isn't your father. Your father is dead.'

'Then you have no right to talk about my parents' relationship,' Da Tian Ting said. 'You only know how to criticize other people. You should reflect on your bad behavior, and how your lies affected the lives of people around you.'

'I've done nothing wrong,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'It's normal for a person to protect their happiness. It's your own fault for losing everything because you didn't protect your own happiness.'

'Da Min Sheng, this is your real self,' Da Tian Ting said. 'You only know how to act innocent in front of Shang Duan Hua. I'm warning you right now that I'm not the same gullible Da Tian Ting in the past. If you do anything to harm me again, I'll make your life miserable.'

'Da Tian Ting, it doesn't matter if you expose the truth because no one will believe you over me,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'Duan Hua will always believe me over you. I'm going to go home and tell Duan Hua and his parents that you and your boyfriend ganged up on me, pushed me onto the floor, broke my ankle and made me have a miscarriage. Duan Hua and his parents will hate you even more.'

They'll never find out I lied about being pregnant. There's nothing you can do to make my life miserable.'

'Da Ming Sheng, have you forgotten you're at a shopping mall?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'There are security cameras and witnesses here who saw and heard everything. What do you think will happen to you if I ask security to give me a copy of the footage of our confrontation to clear my name? Do you think the Shang family will still believe your lies?'

'You!' Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng looked anxiously at the security cameras. She couldn't believe Da Tian Ting turned into a different person who wasn't easy to frame.

'Even if you got rid of the footage, there are many witnesses here who can help me clear my name,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Da Tian Ting!' Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Tian Ting ignored Da Ming Sheng. Da Tian Ting picked up the damaged winter coats and gave it to the shop assistant.

'Miss, I'm sorry for being a nuisance,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I'll pay for these damaged coats. Can you get me another two winter coats?'

'Right away madam,' the shop assistant said.

'Tian Ting, I'm proud of you for standing up for yourself,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'If anyone frames you for something you didn't do, remember you have me. I'll always be here to support you.'

'I wouldn't waste my time to lecture someone who is deluded,' Da Tian Ting said. 'But I won't allow anyone to soil my father's name.'

'Tian Ting, don't be angry,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'You'll scare people if they see you're angry.'

Feng Kai Ze took out his wallet.

'Little monkey, let me pay for uncle's birthday gifts,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I understand,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I'll let you pay for your uncle's birthday gifts.'

Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze ignored Da Ming Sheng. They walked to the

counter and she paid for Da Qing Feng's birthday gifts. She wanted to thank Da Qing Feng for treating her like his daughter after her father died.

Da Ming Sheng got up from the floor. She was jealous of Da Tian Ting. It wasn't fair that Da Tian Ting found a better man than Shang Duan Hua.

Da Ming Sheng didn't care about her swollen ankle, and took a taxi home. She was going to convince Shang Duan Hua and his parents that Da Tian Ting made her miscarried before Da Tian Ting exposed the truth.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 114

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 26, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 115

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 115



Da Ming Sheng arrived home. She exaggerated her limp to look pitiful. Everyone were sitting in the living room and looking at a CD on the coffee table.

‘Duan Hua...’ Da Ming Sheng called.

Everyone dismissed Da Ming Sheng’s limp.

‘Dad, mum, Duan Hua, what happened?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘Mrs Shang junior, what’s the special occasion?’ Lam Shu Pan asked. ‘Why have you returned home without shopping bags?’

‘Mum, I...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng looked pitifully at Shang Duan Hua, but he glared at her instead of sticking up for her.

Da Ming Sheng doubted Da Tian Ting had called Shang Duan Hua about the

winter coat incident. Besides, they wouldn't believe Da Tian Ting without evidence. Did that mean Shang's company was bankrupt? Was she the pauper Mrs Shang junior? What would her friends think of her if they found out? She wasn't going to accept the years she invested on marrying a rich man like Shang Duan Hua wouldn't bear fruit.

'Mrs Shang junior, it's only two o'clock in the afternoon,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Why aren't you out showing off to your friends? Did you come home early because you ran out of money?'

'Mum, I...' Da Ming Sheng said. She sat innocently next to Shang Duan Hua on the sofa. 'Duan Hua, tell me what happened.'

'My mum asked you a question, why aren't you answering my mum's question?' Shang Duan Hua asked coldly.

'I... Duan Hua, is everyone worried because Shang's company is in a crisis?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

'If you already know Shang's company is in a crisis, why do you need to ask?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

Lam Shu Pan hated her selfish shopaholic daughter-in-law.

'Mum, why do you always speak rudely to me?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

'Stop acting innocent,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'I must have been blind to give my blessing for Duan Hua to marry a liar like you. You're someone who would do anything to get what they want.'

Da Ming Sheng cursed Da Tian Ting for calling everyone and snitching on her. She was going to fight fire with fire, and not lose to Da Tian Ting.

Da Ming Sheng cried crocodile tears.

'Mum, they're lying,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'At the shopping mall, big sister and her boyfriend ganged up on me, they pushed me onto the floor, broke my ankle and made me mis...'

'You said you saw Tian Ting,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'Where and when did you see her?'

Shang Duan Hua was happy someone saw Da Tian Ting again.

‘Where did you see Tian Ting?’ Shang Ming asked. ‘Is Tian Ting healthy? Tell me, where did you see her?’

Lam Shu Pan waited impatiently to hear Da Ming Sheng to say where she saw Da Tian Ting.

Judging by everyone’s reaction, Da Ming Sheng’s assumption was wrong. If Da Tian Ting didn’t call them, why were they looking like the sky fell?

‘Tell me where you saw Tian Ting!’ Shang Duan Hua demanded.

‘Duan Hua...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

It was the first time Shang Duan Hua raised his voice at Da Ming Sheng.

‘It looks like she went to look for Tian Ting to bully Tian Ting,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Where did you find Tian Ting?’ Shang Duan Hua asked. ‘What did you do to hurt Tian Ting this time?’

‘I... it’s big sister who injured me,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng wanted someone to tell her why Shang Duan Hua and his parents suddenly hated her.

‘Da Ming Sheng, do you think I’ll believe your lies again?’ Shang Duan Hua asked. He picked up the CD and tossed it onto Da Ming Sheng’s lap. ‘You don’t need to watch the footage to know that you poured the hot coffee on your body, and you framed Tian Ting.’

Da Ming Sheng stared at the CD on her lap. She understood why everyone hated her. They found out she lied about Da Tian Ting pouring hot coffee on her body.

‘Da Ming Sheng, the evidence is on your lap,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘Tell me, did you pour hot water on your arm and framed Tian Ting too?’

Shang Duan Hua realised he married the wrong woman too late. He thought Da Ming Sheng was a gentle and understanding woman. It was all an act! He finally understood why Da Tian Ting said he was blinded by his shallowness, and that he would regret marrying Da Ming Sheng.



‘Duan Hua, it’s not what you think,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Let me explain.’

‘This should be good,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘I’m listening.’

‘I... the truth is...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng didn’t know what to say to cover up her exposed lies.

‘Why aren’t you explaining anything?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

Shang Duan Hua was a fool to mistreat Da Tian Ting, and believe Da Ming Sheng’s lies.

‘Duan Hua, I did everything because I love you and I’m scared of losing you,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Duan Hua, forgive me. I fell in love with you at first sight. But you were engaged to big sister. I had to think of ways to secure your heart. Duan Hua, I love you. Duan Hua, forgive me.’

If Da Ming Sheng couldn’t lie then she would beg to keep her Mrs Shang junior status.

‘You love me?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

‘Yes,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Duan Hua, I truly love you.’

‘Don’t you mean you truly love my money to show off to your friends?’ Shang Duan Hua asked. ‘Since you married me, what have you done for this family? Have you taken care of me or my parents? Shang’s company is in a crisis. While my dad is working hard to save Shang’s company, you’re out shopping all day.’

Shang Duan Hua was a fool to fall in love with Da Ming Sheng’s fake gentle and understanding persona.

Da Ming Sheng held onto Shang Duan Hua’s arm and sobbed.

‘Duan Hua, forgive me,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I was wrong. I promise I’ll change.’

‘Now I know I made a big mistake marrying you,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘I chose to believe your lies, and hurt Tian Ting who did love me. Now I know you’re not worth one of Tian Ting’s fingers.’

Da Ming Sheng didn’t want to believe Shang Duan Hua’s words. She was better than Da Tian Ting.

‘Tian Ting did everything to take care of me,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘What have you done for me? You only know how to buy clothes and put on makeup.’

Da Ming Sheng covered her ears, and shook her head.

‘Lies,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Stop lying.’

‘It’s the truth,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘I admit I used to like you because of your looks and to show you off to my friends. I betrayed Tian Ting who loved me because I was blinded by your looks.’

‘Shut up!’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I don’t want to listen to your lies!’

‘I could have forgiven you for what you did to marry me if you’ve been a dutiful wife and daughter-in-law,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Duan Hua, forgive me,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I was wrong. I’ll change. Give me a chance to show you I can change.’

Shang Duan Hua pushed Da Ming Sheng’s hands off his arm.

‘Dad, mum, forgive me,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I promise I’ll change. We’re a family. I’ll change. I’ll be a dutiful wife, and daughter-in-law. Dad, mum, give me a chance.’

‘We can’t change the past,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘You’re Duan Hua’s wife, and part of this family.’

‘Mum, does that mean you forgive me?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘Whether I forgive you or not, I can’t change the truth that Duan Hua married you,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Mum, dad, Duan Hua, I know it’s wrong of me to neglect my duties as a wife and daughter-in-law,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I promise I’ll learn from my mistakes. In the future I’ll be a good wife and daughter-in-law.’

‘I’ll believe it when I see it,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Duan Hua couldn’t undo marrying Da Ming Sheng. She was his wife. As her husband, he had a duty to give her a chance to change.

‘Duan Hua, I promise I won’t disappoint you,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘You’ll see, I’ll be a good wife and daughter-in-law.’

Da Ming Sheng was relieved she salvaged the situation. As long as Shang Duan Hua and his parents didn't find out about what she did after she married Shang Duan Hua, she could still be Mrs Shang junior.

'Ming Sheng, you said you saw Tian Ting,' Shang Ming said. 'Where did you see Tian Ting?'

'Dad, I...' Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng thought it was Da Tian Ting's fault that everyone didn't believe her unconditionally. She was going to cover up her other lies at all cost.

'Tell me, where you saw Tian Ting,' Shang Meng said.

'Shang Ming, we'll see Tian Ting soon,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Shu Pan, we owe Tian Ting so much,' Shang Ming said. 'It's like Tian Ting disappeared. She doesn't answer our calls or visited us for a long time. I'm just worried about her.'

'I know, we're all worried about Tian Ting too,' Lam Shu Pan said.

Da Ming Sheng believed Shang Duan Hua's parents were telling the truth. If Da Tian Ting didn't snitch on her behind her back then who planted doubts in their heads? Xiao Yu? No, Xiao Yu was a naive simpleton.

'Da Ming Sheng, did you hear me?' Shang Ming asked. 'Tell me, where you saw Tian Ting.'

'Dad, I...' Da Ming Sheng said.

Although everyone forgave Da Ming Sheng, they didn't forget how she wronged Da Tian Ting and destroyed their bonds with Da Tian Ting.

'Da Ming Sheng, don't tell me you did something to hurt Tian Ting again,' Shang Ming said.

'Dad, I didn't hurt big sister,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'It's big sister and her boyfriend who ganged up on me. They pushed me onto the floor, and broke my ankle.'

'I don't believe Tian Ting would push you without a reason,' Shang Ming said. 'You must have done something to provoke Tian Ting.'

‘Dad, I didn’t provoke big sister,’ Da Ming Sheng lied.

Da Ming Sheng regretted impulsively using the wrong chess piece. Shang Duan Hua and his parents wouldn’t be easily fooled by her lies after they found out the truth about her framing Da Tian Ting.

‘I don’t care if you’re lying,’ Shang Ming said. ‘I just want to know where you saw Tian Ting.’

‘Dad, I saw big sister at the shopping mall,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Big sister was shopping for clothes with her boyfriend.’

‘Forget it,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Shang Ming, we’ll see Tian Ting soon.’

Shang Ming thought everything fell apart after he lost his ideal daughter-in-law. In his eyes Da Tian Ting should have been his daughter-in-law.

‘Mum, why are you certain we’ll see big sister soon?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

Da Ming Sheng was taken back by Lam Shu Pan’s dagger like she wasn’t allowed to ask Lam Shu Pan questions.

‘Dad, mum, I’m going to go buy a gift,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Duan Hua stood, walked to the car and left Da Ming Sheng in the dark. How could Da Ming Sheng forget Da Qing Feng’s birthday? He understood why Da Qing Feng loved Da Tian Ting like a daughter, because Da Tian Ting treated Da Qing Feng like a father unlike Da Ming Sheng.

‘Mum, what’s going on?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

Shang Ming couldn’t stand being in the same room as Da Ming Sheng.

‘It looks like I shouldn’t expect too much from someone who doesn’t remember her own father’s birthday,’ Shang Ming said.

Shang Ming stood, and walked to his bedroom.

‘Mum, whose birthday is dad talking about?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘How can you call yourself a daughter?’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Tomorrow is your father’s birthday.’

‘Mum, I’m sorry,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I’ve been preoccupied settling in here, and I forgot to tell Duan Hua about my dad’s birthday.’

Da Ming Sheng was grateful it wasn't Shang Ming's birthday that she forgot.

'Settling in here?' Lam Shu Pan asked. 'Shouldn't you say you've been busy shopping and partying?'

Lam Shu Pan stood, and walked to her bedroom too.

'Mum...' Da Ming Sheng called.

Da Ming Sheng was left alone in the living room. Why didn't anyone tell her about her dad's birthday?

Da Ming Sheng called her mum's phone.

'Mum, why didn't you tell me tomorrow is dad's birthday?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

'Ming Sheng, in the past you didn't care about your dad's birthday so I didn't remind you,' Ning Kan said.

'Mum, you've caused big trouble for me!' Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng hung up on her mum. She refused to admit she did anything wrong by chasing away Da Tian Ting. Everyone's lives were better without Da Tian Ting in their lives.

On Ning Kan's end, she was perplexed by Da Ming Sheng's sudden phone call.

'Qing Feng, Ming Sheng said I caused her trouble by not reminding her about your birthday,' Ning Kan said.

'Ning Kan, ignore Ming Sheng,' Da Qing Feng said. 'Ming Sheng never remembers my birthday and she's still alive and healthy. It's Ming Sheng's fault that Tian Ting isn't here to celebrate my birthday tomorrow.'

'Qing Feng, your birthday this year is special because Ming Sheng's married to Duan Hua now,' Ning Kan said. 'What if Ming Sheng and Duan Hua are planning a surprise birthday dinner for you?'

'The person I want to see on my birthday is Tian Ting,' Da Qing Feng said.

'Da Qing Feng, don't mention her name again!' Ning Kan said.

'I have the right to say my niece's name!' Da Qing Feng said.

‘Da Qing Feng, she’s your niece and Ming Sheng is your daughter!’ Ning Kan said.

‘Has Ming Sheng treated me like her father?’ Da Qing Feng asked. ‘Ming Sheng isn’t half the person my niece is! Only Tian Ting remembered my birthday every year, and prepared a birthday dinner for me. In the past when I’m sick or having work problems, Tian Ting listened to me and offered support while Ming Sheng parties with her friends. Tian Ting sacrificed her monthly pay to support this family while Ming Sheng spent my money to buy clothes and makeup. Ning Kan, how can you ask me to care about a daughter who disrespects me and doesn’t care about me? Since Tian Ting left, there’s no one to do the housework so you do housework. Ning Kan, you complained you’re tired from doing housework. Have you thought how tired Tian Ting must have been working during the day, and doing housework at night?’

‘I...’ Ning Kan said.

Ning Kan couldn’t deny after Da Tian Ting left, she had no spare time to gamble with her friends. She had to do all the housework and grocery shopping. Da Ming Sheng stopped visiting and calling her and Da Qing Feng after Da Ming Sheng married Shang Duan Hua. But Da Ming Sheng was her daughter, and Da Tian Ting was no one to her.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 115

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 26, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapter 116

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapter 116



The Shang family visited Da Qing Feng’s home to wish him a happy birthday, and to see Da Tian Ting too.

Da Ming Sheng was on her best behavior to make everyone put their guards down against her.

‘Dad, Duan Hua bought this for you,’ Da Ming Sheng said sweetly. ‘I hope you’ll like it.’

Da Qing Feng accepted the gift, and smiled politely. He didn’t believe Da Ming Sheng actually changed after marrying Shang Duan Hua. He didn’t believe Shang Duan Hua and his parents came just to wish him a happy birthday either.

‘Dad, open it and see if you like it,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Qing Feng, now do you see how much Ming Sheng cares about you?’ Ning Kan asked. ‘In the future, you can’t say Ming Sheng doesn’t care about you.’

‘Ning Kan, it’s my birthday,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Don’t dampen my mood.’

Da Qing Feng unwrapped the box. It was laughable he received a birthday gift from his son-in-law whereas his daughter had never bought him a birthday gift.

Da Qing Feng opened the box. It was a teapot. He hated drinking tea, but his son-in-law bought him a teapot. It showed the Shang family didn’t come to just to wish him a happy birthday.

‘Wow,’ Ning Kan said. ‘What a beautiful teapot.’

Da Qing Feng would rather the Shang family didn’t come to his home on his birthday. The Shang family kept looking at the front door like they wanted to leave or they were waiting for someone to appear so they could leave.

‘Dad, I’ll go put your teapot in a safe place,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

No one cared what Da Ming Sheng wanted to do with the teapot.

‘Big brother, big sister, it’s kind of you come here and wish Qing Feng a happy birthday,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Stay for dinner. I can cook dinner for everyone.’

‘We bought ingredients to cook a birthday dinner for Qing Feng,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Ming Sheng, go cook dinner.’

‘Yes mum,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng helped out in the kitchen less than ten times since she was born. She didn’t know how to cook, but to get into Duan Hua’s family’s good books, she had to appear obedient. It was a tiring life to be a people pleaser.

Ning Kan knew the Shang family were making life hard on Da Ming Sheng, because Da Ming Sheng couldn’t cook.

‘Ming Sheng doesn’t need to help me cook,’ Ning Kan said. ‘I like having the kitchen to myself when I cook.’

‘Thank you mum,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Ning Kan gave Da Qing Feng a dagger, and walked into the kitchen. She was frustrated Da Qing Feng didn’t smile sincerely and he didn’t praise the teapot even though he hated drinking tea.

Da Qing Feng forced himself to be a good host by making small talk.



‘Big brother, excuse my humble abode,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Qing Feng, you have a good home,’ Shang Ming said. ‘In the past I’ve lived in a home smaller than your home.’

If Shang Ming didn’t want to see Da Tian Ting then he wouldn’t have visited Da Qing Feng’s small home.

‘Qing Feng, lately has Tian Ting come here to visit you?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘Tian Ting...’ Da Qing Feng said.

Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng were the reason why Da Tian Ting left Da Qing Feng’s home. Da Qing Feng was sad he couldn’t see the person he wanted to see, but the people he didn’t want to see visited his home.

‘Dad, my parents and I are worried about Tian Ting,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘We don’t know where Tian Ting is. Dad, you’re Tian Ting’s uncle, has she contacted you?’

Da Ming Sheng gritted her teeth. She hated Da Tian Ting. Da Tian Ting was gone, but she couldn’t wipe Da Tian Ting out of everyone’s minds.

Da Qing Feng considered Da Ming Sheng’s feelings, and decided to change the topic of conversation.

‘Perhaps Tian Ting is living her own happy life right now,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Duan Hua, when are you and Ming Sheng going to give me a grandchild to hold?’

‘Dad...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng gaged Shang Duan Hua’s reaction. If he actually wanted a baby then she needed to turn her fake pregnancy into a real pregnancy.

‘Dad, today is your birthday,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘Do you think Tian Ting will visit you to wish you a happy birthday?’

‘Tian Ting...’ Da Qing Feng said.

Da Qing Feng wanted to see Da Tian Ting, but he didn’t want to see Da Ming Sheng sad either. Why couldn’t the Shang family let Da Tian Ting live a happy life, and consider Da Ming Sheng’s feelings?

Shang Ming noticed Da Ming Sheng looked uncomfortable because everyone were worried about Da Tian Ting. He didn't care about Da Ming Sheng, but he respected Da Qing Feng. Since it was Da Qing Feng's birthday, he didn't want to upset Da Qing Feng by mentioning Da Tian Ting's absence again.

'It's Qing Feng's birthday,' Shang Ming said. 'We should be making a toast to Qing Feng instead of talking about matters that can wait.'

'Shang Ming, didn't we come here today to see Tian Ting?' Lam Shu Pan asked carelessly.

'Shu Pan, if you can't understand it's Qing Feng's birthday then you don't need to contribute to the conversation,' Shang Ming said.

'I... I'll keep quiet,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'If everyone came here today to see Tian Ting then everyone can leave,' Da Qing Feng said. 'The last time I saw Tian Ting was at the wedding where everyone here hurt Tian Ting deeply.'

'Dad!' Da Ming Sheng said.

'I've only said the truth,' Da Qing Feng said. 'If I remembered correctly, at the wedding everyone were in a rush to get rid of Tian Ting. Now that Tian Ting is gone, everyone has the nerve to ask about Tian Ting's whereabouts.'

'Dad, stop talking,' Da Ming Sheng said.

'Everyone can heartlessly hurt Tian Ting but can't handle the truth,' Da Qing Feng said.

Da Ming Sheng would have cursed Da Qing Feng if Shang Duan Hua's parents weren't in the same room.

'Mum!' Da Ming Sheng called.

Ning Kan ran back to the living room.

'What is it?' Ning Kan asked.

'Mum, ask dad to be civil,' Da Ming Sheng said.

'Qing Feng, we have guests here,' Ning Kan said.

'What guests?' Da Qing Feng asked. 'I only see unwanted guests.'

Da Qing Feng stood to walk to his bedroom, but the doorbell rang.

The living room turned silent. Apart from Da Ming Sheng and Ning Kan, everyone else hoped it was Da Tian Ting who rang the doorbell.

‘Don’t get your hopes up,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘It’s my workmates coming here to wish me a happy birthday.’

Da Qing Feng walked to the front door, and opened it.

‘Happy birthday uncle!’ Da Tian Ting said. She gave Da Qing Feng a big birthday box. ‘I hope uncle will always be healthy, and live past one hundred years. I guarantee this winter uncle will stay warm.’

Da Qing Feng accepted the big box. He felt seeing Da Tian Ting again was the best birthday gift.

‘Happy birthday uncle!’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I hope uncle will always be happy. I’ll help uncle carry Tian Ting’s birthday gift inside.’

‘Thank you,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Tian Ting, you and your boyfriend should come inside.’

Da Qing Feng knew only Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze came to see him to sincerely wish him a happy birthday.

Everyone in the living room heard Da Tian Ting’s voice, and they stood up from the sofa. They looked in Da Tian Ting’s direction. Da Tian Ting wore a red designer dress, her hair was straightened and she wore light makeup. What made Da Tian Ting look more beautiful was the happy glow on her face.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 116

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
-

## ***Related***

[November 26, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 117

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 117



Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze walked into the chaotic living room. Her uncle's family and the Shang family had nothing to do with her. But she and Feng Kai Ze were living a happy life together so she didn't enjoy seeing them fighting with each other.

Ning Kan comforted Da Ming Sheng who was crying crocodile tears.

'Da Tian Ting, look what you've done!' Ning Kan said. 'It's all your fault our families are fighting. Did you come back here to gloat?'

'Aunt, I only came here to wish uncle a happy birthday,' Da Tian Ting said. 'In the past I'm the only person who remembered uncle's birthday. I didn't expect Ming Sheng and everyone to be here. If I knew then I wouldn't have come here today.'

Da Tian Ting's uncle's family and the Shang family fighting had nothing to do with her. She wasn't going to let Ning Kan or anyone else frame her for something she had no control over.

'Da Tian Ting, if you didn't come here, everyone would be happy,' Ning Kan

said.

‘I’m happy to leave,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I won’t come back here again. Everyone’s problems has nothing to do with me.’

Da Tian Ting grabbed the big box from Feng Kai Ze’s hands and she put it in Da Qing Feng’s hands.

‘Uncle, this is the last birthday gift you’ll receive from me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Uncle, take good care of yourself.’

‘Tian Ting, don’t lea...’ Da Qing Feng said.

Da Qing Feng wanted Da Tian Ting to stay, but he didn’t want Da Ming Sheng to cry a river of tears if Da Tian Ting stayed.

‘Uncle, I understand,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’m an outsider. In the future everyone’s business is none of my business.’

‘Tian Ting, let’s go home,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘We shouldn’t let their stupidity contaminate us.’

Feng Kai Ze was angry at everyone for blaming Da Tian Ting for their problems. He wasn’t going to stand idly and let them hurt Da Tian Ting.

‘Little monkey...’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Who do you think you are?’ Shang Duan Hua asked Feng Kai Ze. ‘You have no right to open your mouth here.’

Da Tian Ting slapped Shang Duan Hua’s cheek. She wasn’t going to let Shang Duan Hua insult Feng Kai Ze.

Da Ming Sheng was too shocked to cry.

‘Shang Duan Hua, it’s you who doesn’t have the right to open your mouth here,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Your betrayal is the root cause for your family’s problems. If you want to be angry, be angry at yourself.’

‘How can you hit me because of this man?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

Shang Duan Hua hated Feng Kai Ze for taking Da Tian Ting away from him.

‘Shang Duan Hua, listen carefully,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘This man is my boyfriend and my future husband. I hit you because you insulted my future husband.’

Da Tian Ting thought one slap was going easy on Shang Duan Hua after everything he and his family did to hurt her.

Feng Kai Ze heard Da Tian Ting acknowledge him as her future husband, and felt it was worth restraining himself from retaliating against Shang Duan Hua's insults.

'Tian Ting, don't be fooled by this man,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'One look at him, and anyone can see he's a bad man.'

'In my eyes you're the bad man,' Da Tian Ting said. 'You had an affair with your fiancé's cousin for ten years. Regardless of what Da Ming Sheng did wrong, you married her, you're her husband, it's your duty to take care of Da Ming Sheng. You need to take responsibility for your choices. You chose to leave me. You don't have the right to blame me for your marital problems. Before you married her, you boasted what a good woman she is and you said I'm not worth a dollar. Now that you know the truth, you have to live with the consequences. Shang Duan Hua, a dollar man like you can never call yourself a good man.'

Da Ming Sheng didn't know why Da Tian Ting helped her to keep Shang Duan Hua.

Shang Duan Hua wasn't going to accept taking responsibility for the wrong choice he made. It was Da Ming Sheng's fault for deceiving him, and Feng Kai Ze's fault for taking Da Tian Ting away from him.

'Da Tian Ting, I don't believe you can be with me for ten years and not have any feelings left for me,' Shang Duan Hua said.

'You're wrong,' Da Tian Ting said. 'We weren't with each other for ten years. We were acquainted with each other for ten years. I treated you like a fiancé, but you mistreated me for ten years. You're nothing to me. Right now the only man in my heart is my future husband.'

Da Tian Ting held Feng Kai Ze's hand.

'I don't believe you,' Shang Duan Hua said.

'I don't care if you don't believe me because you're nothing to me,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Shang Duan Hua, open your eyes. You're another woman's husband, your wife is standing next to you. You should consider your wife's feelings before

you open your mouth. You're an embarrassment if you don't know how to protect your wife.'

'You!' Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Duan Hua felt nothing seeing Da Ming Sheng's tears. He wasn't going to accept Da Tian Ting loved Feng Kai Ze.

'Little monkey, let's go home,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Tian Ting, you can't leave,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Aunty, why can't I leave?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'I... ' Lam Shu Pan said.

After Ning Kan and Da Ming Sheng insulted Da Tian Ting, Lam Shu Pan didn't know what to say to ask Da Tian Ting to help save Shang's company.

'Aunty, your family's problems has nothing to do with me,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Little monkey, let's go home.'

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's hand. They walked together to the car. He didn't forget to turn around to show his happy smile to Shang Duan Hua.

Shang Duan Hua hated Feng Kai Ze. Shang Duan Hua knocked over everything on the coffee table including the teapot he bought for Da Qing Feng that Da Ming Sheng displayed at the centre of the coffee table.

Da Qing Feng saw the broken teapot, and he understood Shang Duan Hua regretted marrying Da Ming Sheng.

'You made your choice,' Da Qing Feng said. 'Live with it.'

Da Qing Feng carried the big box Da Tian Ting gave him to his bedroom.

Shan Duan Hua's temper made Da Ming Sheng fearful of what he would do to her at home.

'How can you break the teapot you bought your father-in-law?' Ning Kan asked.

'Mum, don't say anything,' Da Ming Sheng said.

'Fine,' Ning Kan said. 'Ming Sheng, go back to your bedroom. Tonight don't go



home with the garbage Shang family.'

'Mum...' Da Ming Sheng said.

'Go to your bedroom!' Ning Kan said.

Da Ming Sheng listened to Ning Kan, and walked to her bedroom.

'Shang Duan Hua, come outside with me right now,' Shang Ming said.

Shang Ming dragged Shang Duan Hua outside Da Qing Feng's home. Lam Shu Pan didn't care where Da Ming Sheng stayed, she followed Shang Ming and Shang Duan Hua outside.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 117

## Share this:

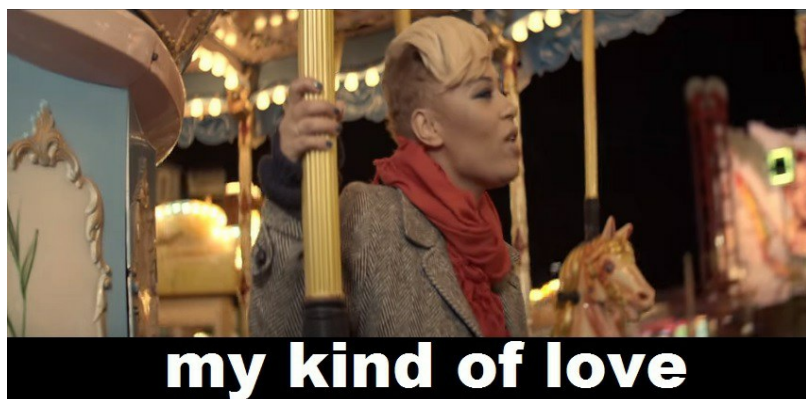
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 26, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 118

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 118



Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze sat in the car. He wanted to comfort her before he drove them home.

‘Tian Ting, are you OK?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Little monkey, do you think I was too harsh toward my elders?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘You only scolded and hit someone who deserved a scolding,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘It was the two nutty women who insulted you unprovoked.’

‘You’re right,’ Da Tian Ting said.

It was the first time Da Tian Ting saw Lam Shu Pan trashed talked Ning Kan.

Da Tian Ting hated Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng, but she didn’t want to see Shang Duan Hua mistreat Da Ming Sheng.

‘Little dummy, don’t stress yourself over their problems,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Their problems aren’t your problems. If you don’t know what to do with your time then think of me and love me more, because I’m lacking love.’

‘Lacking love?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Where’s your masculinity?’

‘In front of you, I can put aside my masculinity if it makes you happy,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You’re like two different people,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘In front of other people you’re an ice mountain, and in front of me you’re like a hot spring.’

Feng Kai Ze hugged Da Tian Ting said.

‘No matter if I’m an ice mountain or a hot spring, my heart will always love you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘You’re nauseously cheesy,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze kissed Da Tian Ting’s cheek.

‘I’m nauseously cheesy happy,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Are you really happy?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘I’m happiest when I’m with you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Your cheesiness is making me puke,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting felt a two way street kind of love was a thousand times better than a one sided love. She was blessed to have Feng Kai Ze in her life.

‘You’ll need to get used to puking because my kind of love is nauseously cheesy,’ Feng Kai Ze said. He pointed to his cheek. ‘Give me a kiss.’

Da Tian Ting kissed Feng Kai Ze’s cheek lightly. He held her face, and kissed her lips.

‘This is happiness,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze let go of Da Tian Ting’s face, and she gently rubbed her lips. If being with him made her happy, she wanted them to always be together.

‘Love, where do you want to go?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘I’m hungry,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Let’s go eat...’

The Shang family obviously had a shouting match near Feng Kai Ze’s car, and their loud voices interrupted Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze’s conversation.

‘Shang Duan Hua, look at the consequences of your childish behavior!’ Shang

Ming said. 'Do you understand you've destroyed our family?'

Lam Shu Pan stood in between Shang Ming and Shang Duan Hua, and she shoved Shang Ming's chest.

'Shut up!' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Duan Hua didn't do anything wrong.'

'This is what happens when you coddle your son,' Shang Ming said.

'Don't take your anger out on Duan Hua,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Duan Hua is innocent. You're angry because you didn't get to ask Tian Ting to help Shang's company.'

'Lam Shu Pan, if your son didn't betray Tian Ting then we wouldn't be in this situation,' Shang Ming said.

'If I was a man I would hate a country bumpkin like Tian Ting too,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'What man would choose an ugly duckling like Tian Ting over a beautiful woman?'

Da Tian Ting's heart hurt to find out Lam Shu Pan who she thought cared about her like a daughter had hated her because she wasn't beautiful in the past.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's hand.

'Tian Ting, in my eyes you're beautiful in the past and right now too,' Feng Kai Ze whispered in Da Tian Ting's ear.

Da Tian Ting heard Feng Kai Ze's heartfelt words stomped Lam Shu Pan's hurtful words.

'Lam Shu Pan, open your eyes,' Shang Ming said. 'Can you say Tian Ting looks like an ugly duckling today?'

'Tian Ting is beautiful now,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'Can you say Tian Ting looked beautiful before the wedding? If Tian Ting loved Duan Hua, she would have dressed up for Duan Hua and Duan Hua wouldn't leave her for Da Ming Sheng. Today our family is in this mess because Tian Ting didn't make the effort to look beautiful for Duan Hua.'

'Mum's right,' Shang Duan said. 'It's because Tian Ting hated me that's why she didn't want me to see her beauty. She wanted me to hate her so I would

leave her for another woman. She's a manipulative woman.'

Da Tian Ting heard enough. She got out of the car, strode to the Shang family and Feng Kai Ze followed her to support her.

'Shang Duan Hua, you MF!' Da Tian Ting cursed.

The Shang family were embarrassed they were caught bad mouthing Da Tian Ting.

Lam Shu Pan wouldn't have insulted Da Tian Ting had she known Da Tian Ting could hear her.

Shang Ming accepted there was no hope left for Da Tian Ting to help save Shang's company.

Shang Duan Hua was shocked Da Tian Ting's boyfriend owned a car that was worth millions. Who was Da Tian Ting's boyfriend?

'Tian Ting, calm down,' Shang Ming said. 'We didn't mean what we said before.'

'Uncle Shang, now I know how you and aunty Lam really feel about me all these years,' Da Tian Ting said.

Thinking about Da Tian Ting how much she loved and sacrificed for the deceitful Shang family made her angry.

'No...' Shang Ming said.

'Don't deny you're a manipulative woman,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'You wanted to end our engagement since the start.'

'Shang Duan Hua, think before you speak,' Da Tian Ting said.

'I'm only exposing your real self,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'I don't believe less than a month after we broke up, you suddenly found a boyfriend who owns a Bugatti. I don't believe a man would be attracted to you when you looked like an ugly duckling.'

Shang Duan Hua smiled slyly at Feng Kai Ze.

'Sir, what did my ex-fiance do to entice you?' Shang Duan Hua asked.

Feng Kai Ze wrapped an arm around Da Tian Ting's waist.

‘It’s me who did everything to entice Tian Ting to be my girlfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Little monkey...’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Shang Duan Hua, it was your betrayal that triggered Tian Ting’s change,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘It made Tian Ting realised you took her love for granted. I want to thank you for leaving Tian Ting for Da Ming Sheng, because it gave me an opportunity to be with Tian Ting.’

‘I don’t believe you would love an old maid,’ Shang Duan Hua said.

‘Of course I don’t love an old maid,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I loved Tian Ting since she was a little girl. It took me more than ten years to find Tian Ting again. The heavens blessed me. On the day I returned home from England, I was reunited with Tian Ting. It was the same day you broke up with Tian Ting. We were reunited at a bar, because Tian Ting was heartbroken over your betrayal. Thank you for breaking Tian Ting’s heart on the same day I returned home. Tian Ting and my bond grew stronger since that day.’

‘You... and Da Tian Ting met each other as children?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 118

## Share this:

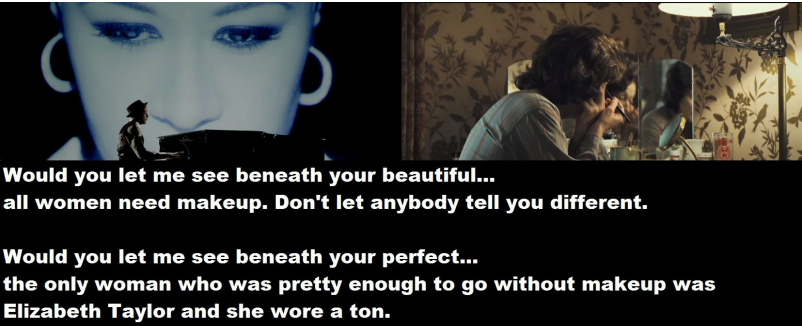
- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[November 27, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapter 119

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapter 119



The Shang family were curious about Feng Kai Ze’s identity.

‘Duan Hua, be civil,’ Shang Ming said.

Shang Ming looked at the Bugatti and back at Da Tian Ting’s boyfriend. He suspected Tian Qiang refusing to loan Shang’s company had something to do with her boyfriend.

‘Dad, how can I be civil?’ Shang Duan Hua asked.

Shang Duan Hua hated Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting being affectionate toward each other. How could Da Tian Ting run into another man’s arms after loving him for ten years?

‘Duan Hua didn’t say anything wrong,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

Lam Shu Pan resented Da Tian Ting for rejecting Shang Duan Hua, and for scheming to make Shang Duan Hua marry Da Ming Sheng.

‘Lam Shu Pan, Shang Duan Hua, shut up!’ Shang Ming said. ‘You two have embarrassed yourselves enough.’

‘We’ve taken off their masks so there is no reason for us to be civil,’ Lam Shu

Pan said.

‘Lam Shu Pan!’ Shang Ming warned.

‘Shang Ming stand aside,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘I’ll do the talking.’

‘Lam Shu...’ Shang Ming said.

Lam Shu Pan shoved Shang Ming to the side, and she stood in front of Da Tian Ting.

‘Da Tian Ting, in the past I was fooled by you,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Now I know my family owes you nothing.’

‘Aunty, why don’t you enlighten me?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn’t understand why the Shang family thought they had the right to be angry at her. All she did was slapped Shang Duan Hua’s cheek for hurting her and insulting Feng Kai Ze.

‘Stop acting innocent,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘You must have betrayed Duan Hua a long time ago. I don’t believe someone like you can find a new boyfriend in less than a month after breaking up with Duan Hua. You planned to make Duan Hua betray you with Da Ming Sheng. Behind Duan Hua’s back you were sleeping with your boyfriend. You wanted everyone to believe Duan Hua betrayed you, and take your boyfriend to the wedding to ruin Duan Hua’s reputation. You wanted to end the engagement from the start, and waited for the right time to execute your scheme.’

‘Aunty, if you want to talk about from the start, I don’t mind,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Aunty, tell me how many years Shang Duan Hua slept with Da Ming Sheng behind my back?’

‘You and your boyfriend met as children,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Who knows how many years you slept with your boyfriend behind Duan Hua’s back?’

‘It’s true I met my boyfriend when we were children,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘But we were separated for sixteen years. My boyfriend was living in England, and I was living here. I haven’t been to England before. Aunty, tell me how I could magically sleep with my boyfriend when we were an ocean apart? Aunty, have you suffered a memory lost? Aunty knows clearly I’ve slaved for your family for



ten years. Auntie, tell me when did I have free time to pamper myself or hop on a plane to England?’

‘I...’ Lam Shu Pan said.

Lam Shu Pan didn’t want to admit Da Tian Ting hadn’t been to England before.

‘Auntie, you and Shang Duan Hua know I’ve been a dutiful fiancée toward Shang Duan Hua,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I can say during the ten year engagement, I didn’t do anything wrong except blindly taking care of Shang Duan Hua. During the days I worked, and I took care of Shang Duan Hua after work. Auntie, tell me when did I have free time to seduce another man? Auntie, do you know how many dinners I skipped to take good care of Shang Duan Hua? Auntie, do you know I suffer from stomach ulcers because of the dinners I skipped? Auntie, have you asked Shang Duan Hua if he cared about my health? Shang Duan Hua had never bought me a meal before. Auntie, have you asked Shang Duan Hua if he cared about my safety? Shang Duan Hua had never drove me home from work during the nights I worked overtime. Auntie, have you asked Shang Duan Hua how many times he let me sit in his car? Shang Duan Hua had never let me sit in his car. Auntie, I wasted my youth on a worthless man like Shang Duan Hua, and on your worthless family. I’m thankful Shang Duan Hua left me for Da Ming Sheng, because I don’t have to waste another minute of my life on Shang Duan Hua, and auntie’s family. Shang Duan Hua’s betrayal helped me to value myself, and to realise I deserve happiness.’

‘I...’ Lam Shu Pan said.

Lam Shu Pan avoided looking at Da Tian Ting’s teary face.

‘Auntie, you and your family are selfish people,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Auntie, have you forgotten how you and your family treated me when Da Ming Sheng framed me? Auntie, how can you and your family have the audacity to blame me for your family problems, and say that you and your family are innocent?’

Shang Duan Hua couldn’t deny he took care of Da Ming Sheng for ten years, and neglected Da Tian Ting for ten years.

‘Tian Ting, I’m sorry,’ Shang Ming said. ‘I’m sorry for the pain my family and I caused you.’

‘Shang Ming, you don’t need to apologise to her!’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘It’s her fault she doesn’t know how to keep a man from straying and leaving her.’

‘Lam Shu Pan, shut up!’ Shang Ming said.

‘I’ve only spoken the truth,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘She has to take responsibility for hers and Duan Hua’s failed relationship. She has no right to blame it all on Duan Hua. It’s her fault for not caring about Duan Hua by taking care of her appearances when they were together.’

‘Mum, you’ve said enough...’ Shang Duan Hua said.

Shang Duan Hua couldn’t deny he lost a good woman like Da Tian Ting.

‘Da Tian Ting, don’t act like you’re a martyr for ten years,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Everyone hates you.’

‘Aunty, I understand now,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I understand how much aunty and your family hates me.’

Da Tian Ting couldn’t stop her tears falling, but she finally understood. It didn’t matter if a person did something right or wrong. If someone hated a person, everything the person did was wrong. Why didn’t she see through the Shang family sooner so she could live a happy life sooner?

Feng Kai Ze hugged Da Tian Ting, and comforted her.

‘Little dummy, don’t waste your tears over people who hate you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Take back your tears. Save your tears for people who love you. I love you.’

Feng Kai Ze wiped Da Tian Ting’s tears off her face, and he vowed to make the Shang family pay for making his fierce apple cry.

‘I’m not going to cry over them anymore,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Let’s go eat,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I don’t want you to get a stomach ache because you wasted time talking to worthless people.’

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s hand and they walked back to the car. She ran out of tears and words to say to the Shang family. Feng Kai Ze was right, the Shang family weren’t worth her tears and breath.

Shang Duan Hua was jealous of Feng Kai Ze, because Feng Kai Ze shared happy

memories being together with Da Tian Ting. Shang Duan Hua didn't remember sharing even one happy memory being together with Da Tian Ting, because he took her love for granted.

The Shang family watched Feng Kai Ze drive Da Tian Ting away from them.

Lam Shu Pan saw Shang Ming's solemn face, and realised her mouth made a big mistake.

'Shang Ming, I...' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Lam Shu Pan, your mouth destroyed the last hope of saving Shang's company,' Shang Ming said. 'Lam Shu Pan, can you say Tian Ting isn't a genuine person? Can you say Tian Ting didn't love and took good care of our family? You were too self-absorbed saying you hate Tian Ting. Did you stop to think that you turned Tian Ting's love for our family into resentment?'

'I...' Lam Shu Pan said.

Lam Shu Pan didn't have a reason to defend her impulsiveness.

'Lam Shu Pan, you only know how to blindly criticize Tian Ting,' Shang Ming said. 'Lam Shu Pan, what about all the wrongs your son did to hurt Tian Ting? Tian Ting did everything for your son and us. How can you accuse Tian Ting of seducing another man behind our backs? Lam Shu Pan, your hurtful words destroyed Tian Ting's unconditional love and respect toward you. If you want to talk about betrayal and seduction, take a good look at your son. Your son and Da Ming Sheng are a prime example of a cheating couple.'

'Enough,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'I admit I was too harsh before. But Duan Hua is innocent. Shang Ming, didn't you hear the way Da Tian Ting talked to us was disrespectful?'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 119

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)

- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[November 27, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 120

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 120



After the Shang family left Da Qing Feng's home, Da Ming Sheng felt restless and scared. If she didn't go back home, Shang Duan Hua would divorce her.

Da Ming Sheng got out of bed, she walked to the front door, and Ning Kan stopped her.

'Ming Sheng, where are you going?' Ning Kan asked.

'Mum, I need to go back to the Shang family home,' Da Ming Sheng said.

'No,' Ning Kan said.

'Mum, if I don't go back now then I can't ever go back there,' Da Ming Sheng said.

'Ming Sheng, do you think they'll welcome you home with open arms?' Ning Kan asked.

'Mum, I worked hard to get Duan Hua to marry me,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'If Duan Hua divorces me now, I'll get nothing.'

‘Ming Sheng, wake up,’ Ning Kan said. ‘If you go back, you’ll only receive their anger. Shang Duan Hua isn’t going to protect you. Shang Duan Hua regrets marrying you. Didn’t you see Shang Duan Hua was jealous of Da Tian Ting’s boyfriend?’

‘Mum...’ Da Ming Sheng said.

Ning Kan grabbed Da Ming Sheng’s arm and pulled her to sit on the sofa.

‘Ming Sheng, Shang Duan Hua wants to get back together with Da Tian Ting since Da Tian Ting turned into a beautiful woman,’ Ning Kan said.

‘Mum, what should I do now?’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘I don’t want Duan Hua to divorce me.’

‘Ming Sheng, you need to get pregnant,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Shang Duan Hua’s parents won’t let him divorce you if you give birth to their grandchild.’

‘Mum, since the wedding, Duan Hua rarely touches me,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘How am I supposed to get pregnant?’

‘Then you need to take their money and valuable possessions before the divorce,’ Ning Kan said.

‘Mum, I don’t want to divorce Duan Hua,’ Da Ming Sheng said.

‘Ming Sheng, Shang Duan Hua and his family hates you after they found out you framed Da Tian Ting,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Even if you stay married to Shang Duan Hua, they’ll make your life hell. Listen to me, if you divorce Shang Duan Hua now, you can find a better man. Right now you have your youthful looks. After your looks fade, no man will want you.’

‘Mum, are you saying I made a mistake marrying into Duan Hua’s family?’ Da Ming Sheng asked.

‘The Shang family is an average rich family compared to the Feng family and the Hong family,’ Ning Kan said.

‘Feng and Hong?’ Da Ming Sheng asked. ‘Mum, do you have a plan?’

‘It’s too late for you to marry into the Feng family,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Everyone knows the Hong Shi’s company’s heiress is marrying the Feng’s company’s heir. There’s only the Hong Shi’s company’s heir available. His name is Hong Shi Chi. I

heard Hong Shi Chi never had a girlfriend. I regret letting you marry Shang Duan Hua.'

'Mum, how can I divorce Duan Hua to marry another man?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

'Ming Sheng, I regret marrying your father,' Ning Kan said. 'My life is a struggle because I married a poor man. I wished I was like Da Tian Ting's mother, Lam Xin Yu. Lam Xin Yu was smart, she left Da Zheng Li to be with a rich man. If I left your father when I was young, I'll be married to a rich man right now.'

'Lam Xin Yu?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

'Yes,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'I heard Lam Xin Yu married a rich man who owns a bank. Lam Xin Yu is living the high life now unlike me. Ming Sheng, don't make the same mistake I made by staying married to a poor man.'

'Mum, I'm scared to divorce Duan Hua,' Ming Sheng said. 'What happens if I can't find a better man?'

'Ming Sheng, you're young and beautiful right now,' Ning Kan said. 'Rich men will desire you. You'll regret wasting your youth if you stay married to Shang Duan Hua. You can't rely on Shang Duan Hua to provide you a happy luxurious life. You need to believe in yourself that you can find a better man than Shang Duan Hua.'

'Mum, I understand,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'I won't go back there today.'

Da Ming Sheng stood, and walked back to her bedroom.

Ning Kan was happy she persuaded Da Ming Sheng to consider divorcing Shang Duan Hua. Ning Kan needed Da Ming Sheng to secure a rich man so she would have a better future.

Da Qing Feng cried in his bedroom, he overheard Ning Kan and Da Ming Sheng's conversation. Although he knew Ning Kan didn't love him, he was sad Ning Kan gave heartless advice to Da Ming Sheng. No wonder Da Ming Sheng turned out to be a bad daughter and wife under Ning Kan's influence.

Da Qing Feng didn't think it was worth going outside to fight with Ning Kan and Da Ming Sheng.

Da Qing Feng opened the big box Da Tian Ting gave him. Inside were winter coats, sweaters and vests. Da Tian Ting was right, he was going to keep warm during winter.

Da Qing Feng regretted he wasn't successful in life, and couldn't give Ning Kan a luxurious life. But he was grateful for being blessed with a loving big brother and niece.

Da Qing Feng hugged one of his new warm winter coats. He wouldn't give up a loving niece like Da Tian Ting in exchange for success and money.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 120

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 27, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)



UVB – Chapter 121

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



Chapter 121



Feng Kai Ze stayed by Da Tian Ting’s side since they left her uncle’s home. He hated seeing her cry over the Shang family. A part of him felt insecure. He was scared she would go back to Shang Duan Hua, because a ten year engagement was a long time.

Da Tian Ting didn’t want to cry over the Shang family who only brought sorrows into her life. She wouldn’t leave a good man like Feng Kai Ze for Shang Duan Hua. She needed to find out her own talents, and forget about the past.

‘Little monkey, what do you think I’m good at doing?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Being my girlfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Da Tian Ting looking ahead reassured Feng Kai Ze that she wouldn’t hold onto the past and get back together with Shang Duan Hua.

Da Tian Ting rolled her eyes.

‘Apart from being your girlfriend,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Being my wife,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘I’m being serious,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I’m being serious too,’ Feng Kai Ze said. He held Da Tian Ting’s hand. ‘Tian Ting, will you marry me? Will you let me take care of you for the rest of your life?’

‘Aren’t we rushing into marriage?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Marriage is sacred to me. I don’t want us to divorce if later we find out we’re not compatible.’

‘We’re not rushing into marriage,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘We’ve known each other for more than twenty years. Compared to other married couples, we’re slow.’

‘What twenty years?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘We met as children, but we were separated for sixteen years. I don’t know what you’ve done for the last sixteen years. I only know your name, and that you’re Feng’s company’s heir. I haven’t met your family. What if your family don’t approve of me?’

Feng Kai Ze squeezed Da Tian Ting’s nose.

‘Little dummy, leave everything to me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You only need to prepare to be my bride.’

‘Who wants to be your bride?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting walked ahead of Feng Kai Ze, and her heart fluttered. In the past she didn’t take his marriage proposals seriously. But after she spent weeks with him and got to know him, she realised he did want to marry her.

Feng Kai Ze caught up to Da Tian Ting, he wrapped an arm around her waist and they walked together.

‘Tian Ting, soon you’ll be my bride,’ Feng Kai Ze whispered in Da Tian Ting’s ear. ‘You’ll be Mrs Feng for life.’

‘Don’t stand close to me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘We’re in public.’

Feng Kai Ze smiled, he didn’t let go of Da Tian Ting’s waist and they walked toward a shop that sold jewellery.

‘Wow,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘This intricate diamond necklace is beautiful.’

Da Tian Ting used to wish Shang Duan Hua would buy her a lover’s token. She

would have been happy with a cheap necklace, because it was the gesture that mattered to her.

Da Tian Ting was grateful Shang Duan Hua never gave her a gift, because it would be a waste to throw it out after their break up.

‘Tian Ting, do you like this necklace?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Yes,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Come with me inside,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s hand, and he took her into the shop.

‘Little monkey, what are you doing?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘What else can I do in a shop that sells jewellery?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze waved a shop assistant to a display cabinet.

‘I want to buy this necklace for my girlfriend,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Sir, I’m sorry,’ the shop assistant said. ‘Another customer reserved this necklace. The customer is coming here today to pick it up.’

Da Tian Ting was a little disappointed the necklace had an owner. She squeezed Feng Kai Ze’s hand to signal them to leave.

‘I’ll pay double to buy this necklace,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Sir, I’m sor...’ the shop assistant.

‘Little monkey, don’t burn money crazily,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t need this necklace. Let’s leave.’

Da Tian Ting dragged Feng Kai Ze outside the shop.

‘Tian Ting, I’m serious,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I find money for you to spend.’

Feng Kai Ze wanted to buy everything Da Tian Ting wanted. It was meaningless for him to be rich when alive, and not spend it on Da Tian Ting. He didn’t want to be buried with his money.

‘Little monkey, I don’t mind if you spend money on me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘But I don’t want you to go bankrupt because of me. I don’t need expensive things like the necklace.’

‘But every day I earn a hundred times more money than the money I spend,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Little monkey, you shouldn’t waste your father’s money,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You should only spend your father’s money frugally.’

‘Who said I’m spending another person’s money?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘How can you earn money if you’re jobless?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Where else can your source of income come from except from another person?’

Da Tian Ting didn’t want Feng Kai Ze to waste his family’s money like Da Ming Sheng. She shook her head, and told herself to forget the past.

Feng Kai Ze burst out laughing.

‘Why are you laughing?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘I’m being serious, it’s not good to waste another person’s money.’

‘Tian Ting, you don’t need to worry,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Every dollar I spend on you is a dollar I earned.’

‘How can you earn money if you’re jobless?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting used to think Feng Kai Ze was a rich gangster, and she didn’t approve of him making a living being a gangster. After she found out he was Feng’s company’s heir, she didn’t approve of him wasting his family’s money either.

‘Who said I didn’t work?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘How can you work and earn money if you spend most of your day with me?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Big dummy, if you’re going lie, at least make it believable.’

‘Men who use their strength to earn money don’t have time to spend most of the day with their wives,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Geniuses like me only needs to use their brain a little to earn money and they can spend most of the day with their wives.’

‘Mr Genius, tell me, what do you do for a living?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘I don’t believe geniuses can play all day and still earn money.’

‘I’ll tell you after you become Mrs Genius,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m going to buy

you the necklace you like otherwise I can't call myself your boyfriend.'

Da Tian Ting promised Feng Kai Ze that she would trust him. She believed he wouldn't lie to her.

Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting back to the shop, and he waved the same shop assistant to the display cabinet.

'Sir, I'm sorry I can't sell you this necklace even if you paid double the price,' the shop assistant said.

'Why not?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn't want Feng Kai Ze to buy the necklace for her. She was only curious why someone would turn down the chance to double their profit.

'Because I'm the customer who reserved the necklace,' Hong Shi Na said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 121

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 27, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 122

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 122



Hong Shi Na's arrogant attitude turned sweet after she noticed Feng Kai Ze standing in the shop.

'Kai Ze, what a coincidence, you're here too,' Hong Shi Na said.

Hong Shi Na thought she was fated to see Feng Kai Ze again at a jewellery shop. She dismissed Da Tian Ting standing next to him, because she was going to make Da Tian Ting disappear before hers and Feng Kai Ze's wedding day.

Feng Kai Ze dismissed Hong Shi Na. He only wanted to buy the necklace for Da Tian Ting.

Da Tian Ting sensed that Hong Shi Na had feelings for Feng Kai Ze. But Da Tian Ting wasn't the same pushover Da Tian Ting in the past, she wasn't going to let anyone steal her little monkey from her.

Feng Kai Ze felt Da Tian Ting held his hand tighter. He was happy Da Tian Ting wanted to protect their relationship.

Hong Shi Na was hurt Feng Kai Ze ignored her.

‘Miss Hong, you’re here,’ the shop assistant said. ‘I’ll wrap up your necklace for you.’

‘I want to take another look at the necklace before you wrap it,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘Yes Miss Hong,’ the shop assistant said and took out the necklace from the display cabinet. ‘Miss Hong, this is a one of a kind custom made necklace.’

Da Tian Ting’s curiosity was satisfied. She understood why the shop assistant didn’t accept Feng Kai Ze’s offer, because it was Hong Shi Na who reserved the necklace.

‘Little monkey, I don’t want this necklace,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Let’s leave.’

‘The necklace is contaminated,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Tomorrow I’ll take you shopping to buy a prettier necklace.’

‘Little monkey, you promised me so you have to keep your promise,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Have I ever lied to you?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze held onto Da Tian Ting’s hand, and they walked out of the jewellery shop.

Hong Shi Na abandoned the necklace and chased Feng Kai Ze.

‘Miss Hong, don’t you want to buy the necklace?’ the shop assistant asked.  
‘Miss Hong...’

Hong Shi Na didn’t look back at the jewellery shop, and kept running. She stood in front of Feng Kai Ze, and blocked his way.

‘Kai Ze, why are you avoiding me?’ Hong Shi Na asked.

Feng Kai Ze wrapped an arm around Da Tian Ting’s waist protectively.

‘Miss Hong, you and I aren’t close,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You should remember to call me Mr Feng.’

Da Tian Ting heard from Feng Kai Ze’s cold tone of voice matched the look of contempt in Feng Kai Ze’s eyes. Her little monkey hated Hong Shi Na more than he hated Mac Kai An.

Da Tian Ting thought if Hong Shi Chi was a vile man then his little sister Hong Shi Na wouldn't be little miss sunshine either.

Hong Shi Na endured Feng Kai Ze's contempt.

'Kai Ze, I'm sorry for being impulsive the last time we met,' Hong Shi Na said. 'Can't you forgive me, and give us a fresh start?'

'There is nothing between you and me,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Go home and tell Hong Shi Chi if he dares hurt my woman again, I'll make his family pay a high price.'

One look at Hong Shi Na reminded Feng Kai Ze about how Hong Shi Chi kidnapped Da Tian Ting, and Hong Shi Chi's men would have gang raped Da Tian Ting if Feng Kai Ze didn't save Da Tian Ting in time.

Lately Feng Kai Ze spent his time comforting Da Tian Ting to help her recover from the kidnapping trauma. Seeing Hong Shi Na reminded him to take revenge on Hong Shi Chi.

Da Tian Ting heard Hong Shi Chi's name, and she hugged Feng Kai Ze's waist to feel safe. She was traumatized about what almost happened to her at the bar that day. She couldn't forget how Hong Shi Chi's men ripped her clothes, and threatened to assault her body.

'No...' Da Tian Ting murmured.

Feng Kai Ze heard Da Tian Ting's trembling voice. He gently held her face, and comforted her.

'Tian Ting, it's over,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Don't be scared. In the future, I won't let him lay a finger on you.'

'I believe you,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting clutched Feng Kai Ze's shirt. His protectiveness eased her anxiety. She told herself to forget what happened at the bar. Her little monkey saved her, and she was safe in his arms.

Hong Shi Na was startled to see Da Tian Ting's face paled at the mention of Hong Shi Chi's name.

'Did my big brother do something to her?' Hong Shi Na asked.



‘Go home and ask him yourself,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s waist, and they walked around Hong Shi Na.

Hong Shi Na caught up to Feng Kai Ze.

‘Tell me what my big brother did,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘You and your big brother are a pair of siblings who makes me want to vomit,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Don’t let me see your face again. If you show your face, I don’t mind hitting a vile person like you and your big brother.’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t want Da Tian Ting to be reminded of that day at the bar so he didn’t want to recount what happened that day.

‘Why do you hate me?’ Hong Shi Na asked.

Hong Shi Na cried pitifully, and attracted the attention of other people at the shopping mall. But her tears were annoying in Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting’s eyes.

‘Tian Ting, ignore her and let’s go home,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘OK,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Little monkey, let’s go home.’

Da Tian Ting wasn’t going to pity Hong Shi Na. If she was soft hearted toward Hong Shi Na then Hong Shi Na would use it against her to get closer to Feng Kai Ze.

Hong Shi Na cried in hope of Feng Kai Ze comforting her. She didn’t expect he would walk away from her with another woman.

‘Feng Kai Ze, I’m not going to give up on you!’ Hong Shi Na screeched. ‘No one else can have you, because you belong to me!’

Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting pretended they didn’t hear Hong Shi Na screeching, and they walked toward the car.

People walked past Hong Shi Na, and recognised her.

‘Isn’t that Hong Shi’s company’s heiress, Hong Shi Na?’ a woman asked.

‘Yes,’ a man said. ‘What is she doing crying and screeching in the middle of a shopping mall?’

‘Keep your voice down,’ the woman said. ‘If she hears you, she’ll make our lives hell.’

No one dared to go near Hong Shi Na like she was a dangerous wild animal.

Hong Shi Na dismissed the people around her. She couldn’t accept Feng Kai Ze loving another woman. She was seen as a gentle princess in everyone’s eyes, Feng Kai Ze wasn’t allowed to reject her! She always got what she wanted. If she wanted Feng Kai Ze, she was going to have him. On her wedding day, she was determined to make Feng Kai Ze her groom.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 122

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[November 28, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 123

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



### Chapter 123



Feng Kai Ze took Da Tian Ting back to her old apartment outside the CBD. Fortunately Da Tian Ting’s complexion returned to normal since bumping into Hong Shi Na at the shopping mall. Feng Kai Ze vowed to deal with the vile Hong siblings.

‘Tian Ting, in the future you don’t have to fear the Hong family,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If they see your fear they’ll use it against you.’

‘It’s hard for me not to fear the Hong family because I offended them,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting knew if she didn’t have her little monkey then the Hong family would have tortured and killed her.

‘I only care about you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘If the Hong family hurt you again, I’ll make them feel more pain than the pain they caused you.’

‘Little monkey, you don’t need to look like you want to kill them,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting knew small companies like Shang’s company relied on Feng’s company and Hong Shi’s company to enter the market. Although Feng’s company was the biggest fish in the city, Hong Shi’s company wasn’t a small fish.

‘Tian Ting, don’t think about depressing thoughts,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I want you to live a happy life.’

‘I want to know more about you,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Besides knowing your name and about you being the heir of Feng’s company.’

Feng Kai Ze sat on the sofa, and held a pillow like he was ready to stay in Da Tian Ting’s apartment for a long time.

‘OK,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Ask away. I’ll answer your questions as long as I know the answer.’

Da Tian Ting sat next to Feng Kai Ze on the sofa, and she thought carefully about her first question.

‘Little monkey, are you engaged to Hong Shi Na?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘It’s a one sided engagement,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I never agreed to marry her so to me the engagement doesn’t exist.’

‘But your father arranged the engagement,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting couldn’t handle another heartbreak.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting’s face.

‘Tian Ting, no one can force me to do anything I don’t want to do,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘If you oppose your father, people will say you’re unfilial,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tian Ting, my mother is the only elder in my life who can influence my decision,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘But I lost my mother. There’s no elder left in my life who can change my mind.’

Da Tian Ting didn’t know why Feng Kai Ze was confident he could turn against his father and not be scared of the repercussions.

‘What are you thinking about?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Little monkey, you said you don’t spend your father’s money,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Then what is your income source?’

‘I guarantee the money I earn isn’t stolen,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You can spend my money comfortably.’

‘You promised you’ll answer my questions,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘If the money you earn is legitimate then tell me your income source.’

Da Tian Ting pushed Feng Kai Ze. He laid on the sofa, and she pinned his shoulders.

‘Investing in shares,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze effortlessly reversed his and Da Tian Ting’s positions on the sofa. He laid on top of her, and her heaving chest turned him on.

In the past Ju Feng accused Feng Kai Ze of being impotent because Feng Kai Ze didn’t desire women. But being in close proximity with Da Tian Ting was proof Feng Kai Ze wasn’t impotent.

‘I have friends who invested in shares,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘At the start they made profits. Later they made losses.’

Da Tian Ting held onto Feng Kai Ze’s shoulders so he couldn’t evade her questions. She didn’t notice they were lying on the sofa in a compromising position.

‘Tian Ting, we’ll be husband and wife soon,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t want to pressure Da Tian Ting. He wanted their first time to be a beautiful memory for them.

Feng Kai Ze didn’t understand why Ju Feng couldn’t wait until Ju Feng dropped off Ju Feng’s women at home, and Ju Feng would often sleep with women in the car. But after being reunited with Da Tian Ting, Feng Kai Ze understood why.

‘My mother told me that women should keep a clear head,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘She advised me that I should wait after marriage. Hurry up and stand up.’

‘You’re my family,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Don’t you trust me?’

‘I trust you but it doesn’t mean I should jump in bed with you,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘It’s a matter of principal. I want to wait after marriage.’

‘Are you saying if I want to bed you then I need to marry you first?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Yes,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Good,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Tomorrow we’re getting married.’

‘Feng Kai Ze, are you ruled by your lower half?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Tian Ting, pretend I didn’t say anything,’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze wanted to be a prince in Da Tian Ting’s heart. He didn’t want her to think he was ruled by lust.

‘I’m warning you, if you only want to be with me until you bed me then I’ll chop off your lower half,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Let’s forget I said anything,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You’re my queen. Your word is law.’

Feng Kai Ze desired Da Tian Ting, but he was willing until their wedding night.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 123

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[December 10, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 124

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## Chapter 124



Feng Kai Ze stroked Da Tian Ting's hair.

'Tian Ting, tomorrow stay home and rest,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I have some things to take care of.'

'Tomorrow I have plans to see Xiao Ran,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I won't have time to spend with you.'

Da Tian Ting didn't ask where Feng Kai Ze wanted to go because she trusted him.

Feng Kai Ze passed Da Tian Ting a bank card.

'Take it with you to go shopping tomorrow,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'I have money,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I don't want you to keep spending your money on me.'

'Take it,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'My money is for you to spend. Besides you there's no one else who can spend my money. I don't want to take my money to the grave with me.'

'Little monkey, you shouldn't spoil me like this,' Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting was scared one day after she got used to Feng Kai Ze spoiling her,

he would leave her and she would be left with another heartbreak.

Feng Kai Ze held Da Tian Ting's shoulders, and he reassured her.

'Tian Ting, you give me strength,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Without you, who knows what gutter I'll be living in right now? I have enough money to last for generations. So tomorrow I want you shop comfortably with Xiao Ran.'

'Now I know what a sugar daddy looks like,' Da Tian Ting said sarcastically.

'I like it when you smile for your sugar daddy,' Feng Kai Ze joked.

'You have acquired taste,' Da Tian Ting said. She looked at the bank card Feng Kai Ze gave her. 'I wonder how much money your bank card holds.'

'Not that much,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'How much is not that much?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'Do you mean thousands or hundreds of thousands? If you don't want to tell me, it means you lied to me about having enough money for generations. Here, take back your bank card.'

Da Tian Ting returned Feng Kai Ze's bank card.

'There's enough money on this bank card for you to buy Shang's company,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'If it's not enough for you to spend, I'll...'

Da Tian Ting took back Feng Kai Ze's bank card.

'Since you gave me your bank card then you can't take it back,' Da Tian Ting said.

If Feng Kai Ze had a bank account that could buy Shang's company, it meant Feng Kai Ze wasn't poor.

'Have a good sleep tonight,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Tomorrow have fun shopping with Xiao Ran. If anything happens, call me and I'll run to you.'

'I'm only going shopping with Xiao Ran,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Nothing will happen to me. Even if something did happen, I can handle it on my own. You don't need to worry. Go home and sleep.'

Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting got up from the sofa, and she pushed him to the front door.

Feng Kai Ze kissed Da Tian Ting goodnight, and he went back to his apartment.



Da Tian Ting locked the front door, and smiled at Feng Kai Ze's bank card. Even if it was a beautiful dream, she was going to take Da Xiao Ran on a crazy shopping spree.

Da Tian Ting called Ding Xiao Ran, and she confirmed their shopping outing.

'I'll be there with bells on,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'See you tomorrow morning at ten. Goodnight.'

Da Tian Ting hung up and laid in bed. She was lucky she saw Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng's true colors. A rotten man and woman like Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng deserved to be married to each other.

Over at the Shang residence, Da Ming Sheng walked into the tensed living room. The Shang family and the assistants were gathered in the living room.

'Mistress Lam, I haven't left your home since your diamond necklace was missing,' Xiao Yu said. 'Everyone searched through my belongings. I'm innocent, I didn't take your diamond necklace.'

'You must have hidden it somewhere outside my home!' Lam Shu Pan said.

Shang Ming didn't care about the necklace. He was preoccupied about who wanted to corner Shang's company into a dead end.

Shang Duan Hua didn't care about the necklace either. He ripped the tissue in his hands while thinking about Da Tian Ting being affectionate with Feng Kai Ze. He regretted handing over a diamond like Da Tian Ting to Feng Kai Ze.

No one noticed Da Ming Sheng's anxiety. Da Ming Sheng needed to find a way to get rid of Xiao Yu otherwise Xiao Yu would remember what happened that day and everyone would point their finger at Da Ming Sheng.

'Dad, mum, Duan Hua, I'm home,' Da Ming Sheng said.

No one welcomed Da Ming Sheng.

Lam Shu Pan found a target to vent her anger on.

'Da Ming Sheng, how can you show your face in my home?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

'Mum, I'm your daughter-in-law,' Da Ming Sheng said.

If Da Ming Sheng didn't want to steal everything valuable before divorcing Shang Duan Hua then she wouldn't return to the Shang residence to be Lam Shu Pan's punching bag.

'Do you think you can call yourself a daughter-in-law?' Lam Shu Pan asked. 'You're a curse. Ever since you stepped into the Shang Household, it's been one disaster after another, including Shang's company being in a crisis.'

'Mum, I...' Da Ming Sheng said.

Da Ming Sheng willed herself to cry by thinking about how poor she would be if Shang's company was bankrupt. She looked pitifully at Shang Duan Hua, but he didn't care about her.

'Get out!' Lam Shu Pan said. 'You and your mother are cursed. I must have been blind to give my blessing for you to marry Duan Hua.'

'Mum, I'm sorry,' Da Ming Sheng said.

'Your sorry is useless,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'I was wrong about you being a good woman.'

'Mum, what happened at my parents' home wasn't my fault...' Da Ming Sheng said.

No matter how much Da Ming Sheng cried, no one pitied her.

'Stop crying crocodile tears,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'I won't be fooled by your acting anymore.'

'Have you two caused enough racket yet?' Shang Ming asked. 'With your mouths sparring day and night, there's no peace under this roof. Lam Shu Pan, what good is your motor mouth? Tian Ting would have helped Shang's company if it wasn't for your motor mouth.'

'Shang Ming, I'm not your punching bag!' Lam Shu Pan said. 'We don't know if Shang's company being in a crisis has a connection with Da Tian Ting. If there's no connection then there's no reason for me to talk civilly to Da Tian Ting.'

'How foolish can you be?' Shang Ming asked.

'Shang Ming, you're overestimating Da Tian Ting,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'People like Da Tian Ting know how to put on a show. Da Tian Ting must have hired a

handsome actor to play her boyfriend to make Duan Hua jealous. Stop speculating. Wait for Tian Qiang's CEO to appear and you'll find out who is responsible.'

'Dad, what mum said is reasonable,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'If Da Tian Ting has no connection then we didn't lose our last hope.'

'Even if it's not related to Tian Ting, your attitudes attracts black and blue eyes,' Shang Ming said.

'Shang Ming, it's you who needs to change your attitude,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'What are you doing siding with an outsider like Da Tian Ting?'

'Yes I'm siding with Tian Ting,' Shang Ming said. 'Lam Shu Pan, it was you and your son who rejected Tian Ting. So neither of you have the right to condemn Tian Ting. I'm tired of talking to unreasonable people like you and your son.'

'Enough,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'I don't want to hear Da Tian Ting's name come out of your mouth again. My stolen necklace is more important. Xiao Yu, you little bitch, where did you hide my necklace?'

'Mistress Lam, I swear I'm innocent,' Xiao Yu said. 'If I stole your necklace then lightning will strike me right now.'

'I don't believe you,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'You have one day left to return my necklace. If you don't return it, you'll need to compensate me three hundred thousand dollars.'

Xiao Yu knelt, held onto Lam Shu Pan's leg and cried.

'Mistress Lam, I didn't take your necklace,' Xiao Yu said. 'Where can I find three hundred thousand dollars if I didn't take your necklace?'

Lam Shu Pan kicked Xiao Yu away from her.

'Don't touch me with your thieving hands!' Lam Shu Pan said.

'Mistress Lam, it wasn't me,' Xiao Yu said.

'Who else stole my necklace if it wasn't you?' Lam Shu Pan asked. 'Me? I'll give you a day to return my necklace. If you return it then I'll forgive you.'

Xiao Yu left the Shang residence. She was scared what would happen to her if

the missing necklace wasn't found soon.

Da Ming Sheng recoiled at the sight of Lam Shu Pan ready to tear someone apart expression. Before she married Shang Duan Hua, she used to think Lam Shu Pan would be an easy going mother-in-law. After she married Shang Duan Hua, she found out Lam Shu Pan was the scariest kind of monster mother-in-law. She didn't want to stay at the Shang residence anymore. She needed to find the most valuable object in the Shang residence before she divorced Shang Duan Hua.

'What is your shifty head thinking about?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

'No... nothing,' Da Ming Sheng denied.

'Da Ming Sheng, if you're scheming anything again, get lost right now,' Lam Shu Pan warned. 'After you leave the Shang Household, don't dream about taking a single object from my home.'

'Mum...' Da Ming Sheng said.

'Don't call me mum,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'You make me vomit.'

Da Ming Sheng looked at Shang Duan Hua for help. But he didn't defend her. She didn't need to think deeply to know he was thinking about Da Tian Ting. He stopped loving her since Da Tian Ting transformed into a beautiful woman.

'Stop looking at me resentfully,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'Everything that happened are the consequences of your schemes.'

'Duan Hua, I didn't do anything wrong,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'Everything I did in the past was because I love you.'

'Don't use love to justify your schemes,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'If you can't endure living in my home, let's divorce.'

Da Ming Sheng took a few steps back. What would her friends think of her if Shang Duan Hua wanted to divorce after a month of marriage?

'Duan Hua, don't you love me anymore?' Da Ming Sheng asked.

'I stopped loving you since you deceived me,' Shang Duan Hua said. 'If you're not my wife, I wouldn't let you step foot inside my home. I'm happy to sign divorce papers.'

‘Shang Duan Hua, you MF!’ Da Ming Sheng cursed.

Da Ming Sheng slapped Shang Duan Hua’s face, she cried and ran outside the apartment.

Lam Shu Pan wanted to slap Da Ming Sheng’s face, but she ran away.

‘Duan Hua, are you OK?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘Mum, I’m OK,’ Shang Duan Hua said. ‘I’m going to my room to get some peace and quiet.’

Shang Duan Hua walked to his bedroom. It was the first time Da Ming Sheng slapped him. He was happy instead of angry. He was happy their divorce was imminent.

In the living room, Lam Shu Pan knew Shang Ming was worried about Shang’s company night and day.

‘Shang Ming, tomorrow I’ll come with you to Tian Qiang,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘If the CEO refuse to see us again, we’ll try another day. Stop thinking about asking Da Tian Ting to help us. Da Tian Ting is a nobody so she has no connection to Tian Qiang.’

‘There’s nothing else we can do but wait for Tian Qiang’s CEO to see us,’ Shang Ming said.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 124

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[December 11, 2015 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 125

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## UVB – Chapter 125



Da Ming Sheng ran to a bar. She resented Da Tian Ting, and wanted to tear Da Tian Ting's skin off piece by piece.

Da Ming Sheng thought after she stole Shang Duan Hua from Da Tian Ting then she would live the rich life. But Da Ming Sheng was left with bare hands, and it was Da Tian Ting's fault.

'Da Tian Ting, if you want to fight with me then I'll fight with you to the end,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'I want to see you how low you can fall.'

Da Ming Sheng gulped down a glass of wine.

The following day, Da Tian Ting dressed up in designer clothes to shop with Ding Xiao Ran.

'Tian Ting, is that really you?' Ding Xiao Ran asked. 'You look hot.'

Ding Xiao Ran walked a circle around Da Tian Ting.

‘Who am I supposed to be if I’m not Tian Ting?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting finally understood why dressing nicely helped to improve a person’s mood.

‘Tian Ting, did you win the lottery?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked. ‘From your head to your toes, the cost of your outfit is over one hundred thousand dollars.’

‘Xiao Ran, have you ever seen me waste money on buying lottery tickets?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting knew she was an unlucky person. She didn’t waste money on things that involve luck.

‘Tian Ting, in the past you wouldn’t spend more than ten dollars on clothes,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘Now you burn money on designer clothes. We’re close friends. Share your money making secret with me.’

‘What money making secret?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘I’m jobless, remember?’

‘I don’t believe you,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘I need your help to make money. I owe a lot of rent money.’

‘Xiao Ran, what about your parents?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Can’t they loan you money to pay rent?’

‘My parents are old, they can’t work like they used to,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘Tian Ting, my engagement has gone up in smoke.’

‘What happened?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Did he cheat on you?’

‘I don’t have proof that he’s cheating on me,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘But lately I rarely see him. He usually doesn’t answer my phone calls. When he does answer my phone calls, he’ll say he’s busy and hang up. I heard from his work colleagues that he goes out often with his CEO’s daughter like they’re dating.’

‘Xiao Ran, have you prepared mentally if your suspicions are confirmed?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn’t expect Ding Xiao Ran would go through the same experience she had. Da Tian Ting felt good men were rare in the world.

‘If this happened earlier, I would have been heart broken and depressed,’ Ding

Xiao Ran said. 'But I've comforted my heart, and I don't feel too depressed.'

'Why?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Seeing what happened between you and Shang Duan Hua, I can see that it's better to suffer short term than to suffer long term in a loveless marriage,' Da Xiao Ran said. 'If Bu Wei wants to chase after another woman, there's nothing I can do to stop him. It's better for me to go with the flow, give him freedom and I'll only suffer short term.'

'Xiao Ran, you're more mature than me,' Da Tian Ting said. 'When Shang Duan Hua left me for Da Ming Sheng, I was in a lot of pain. I wished I comforted my heart sooner to lessen the pain and cut back on tears.'

'I learned from your experience,' Da Xiao Ran said. 'Honestly, I hated the way Shang Duan Hua mistreated you all those years. Men, they can't be trusted.'

'Xiao Ran, you're only twenty-seven,' Da Tian Ting said. 'You don't need to worry that you can't attract a good man to marry.'

'Tian Ting, let's go shopping today and not think about men,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'Let's look on the bright side. Since you hit the jackpot, you're paying today.'

Ding Xiao Ran and Da Tian Ting linked arms and they browsed through shops. Ding Xiao Ran didn't care whether she and Bu Wei would stay together or not, because she was going to have an optimistic outlook toward life.

'Xiao Ran, shouldn't we go to the bank first so you can deposit rent money before a shopping spree?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Tian Ting, you know I can't continue to pay off my rent debt until I receive my work pay,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'I'm only browsing today.'

'I'll loan you money to pay your rent debt,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Huh?' Ding Xiao Ran asked. 'Tian Ting, what did you say?'

'How much rent money do you owe?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'I'll give you enough money to pay your rent.'

Ding Xiao Ran was always a good friend to Da Tian Ting. Since Feng Kai Ze had a lot of money, Da Tian Ting thought it was fine for her to use a bit of his money



to help Ding Xiao Ran.

‘Tian Ting, I borrowed money from the bank to pay rent for my family,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘I owe more than one hundred thousand dollars. Unless you own a gold mine, how can you help me pay off my debt? With your work savings, the most you can save is ten thousand dollars.’

‘Let’s go to the bank,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll explain on the way.’

On the way to the bank, Da Tian Ting explained her relationship with Feng Kai Ze.

‘What?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked. ‘Your boyfriend is Feng Kai Ze? No wonder you hit the jackpot. Why aren’t I lucky like you? Since you’re rich now, loaning me money won’t be a problem.’

Inside the bank, the employees were busy working. In the waiting area, Shang Ming and Lam Shu Pan anxiously waited. They felt embarrassed they couldn’t get an appointment time to see the bank’s CEO. All they could do was wait in the waiting area.

‘Shang Ming, I can’t stand waiting here,’ Lam Shu Pan said. ‘Every minute I wait here is a minute of embarrassment. I haven’t been this embarrassed for years.’

‘Do you have a better solution?’ Shang Ming asked.

Shang Ming felt being embarrassed was worth saving Shang’s company.

‘Can’t we find another bank to help us?’ Lam Shu Pan asked.

‘Shang’s company has been in the red for the last five years, it’s Tian Qiang who kept Shang’s company alive,’ Shang Ming said. ‘Do you think another bank would hand over money to a company that has been in the red for the last five years?’

‘If Tian Qiang has been loaning Shang’s company money for five years, why would Tian Qiang stop loaning money now?’ Lam Shu Pan asked resentfully.

Shang Ming sighed. He thought Lam Shu Pan didn’t know how to be grateful. The heavens must be punishing them for their selfishness.

Shang Ming saw a bank manager coming out of an office. He stood and

greeted the bank manager.

‘Manager, please wait a minute,’ Shang Ming said.

‘You are?’ the bank manager asked.

Lam Shu Pan felt embarrassed the bank manager didn’t recognise who Shang Ming was.

‘I’m the CEO of Shang’s company, Shang Ming,’ Shang Ming said.

‘The CEO of the company bankrupt for five years?’ the bank manager asked.

Lam Shu Pan hated staying silent when she felt insulted.

‘Manager, you’re astute,’ Shang Ming said. ‘I came today to see the CEO, can you...’

‘CEO Shang, I’m sorry,’ the bank manager said. ‘My CEO flew to the USA yesterday. I’m afraid you can’t see my CEO today.’

‘Can you help me contact her in the USA?’ Shang Ming asked.

Shang Ming didn’t know if the bank’s CEO was actually in the USA or avoiding him.

‘I’m sorry I can’t help you,’ the bank manager said.

The bank manager walked toward the front door, and Shang Ming chased after the bank manager.

At the front door, the bank manager recognised Da Tian Ting walking into the bank with Ding Xiao Ran.

‘Hello Miss,’ the bank manager greeted Da Tian Ting.

‘Hello,’ Da Tian Ting greeted awkwardly.

Da Tian Ting didn’t know who the bank manager was, but she thought he dressed well and she didn’t understand why he was being overly courteous toward her.

‘Miss, why did you come to the bank today?’ the bank manager asked.

‘I’m helping a friend pay off her rent money,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Miss, you’re a VIP,’ the bank manager said. ‘Please go to the second level, and

someone will serve you immediately.'

'Huh?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting didn't understand why she was given VIP treatment at Tian Qiang. Since Tian Qiang gave excellent customer service, she wanted to open a bank account with Tian Qiang in the future.

The bank manger smiled warmly at Da Tian Ting, and walked outside the bank to make a phone call to customer service on level two.

'Later, a young woman by the name of Da Tian Ting and her friend will come to level two,' the bank manager said. 'Da Tian Ting is a VIP. Take good care of her.'

Da Tian Ting thought the bank manager was strange while Ding Xiao Ran pulled Da Tian Ting's sleeve.

'Tian Ting, look who's here,' Ding Xiao Ran said.

'Who?' Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting looked ahead, she was unhappy to see two people she didn't want to see.

'What are you doing here?' Lam Shu Pan asked Da Tian Ting.

'Tian Ting and I are here to pay rent,' Da Tian Ting said coldly.

'Lam Shu Pan, don't you know how to speak civilly?' Shang Ming asked.

'How can I be civil toward this nobody?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

'Lam Shu Pan, you're being unreasonable,' Shang Ming said.

'It's this disgusting girl who is unreasonable,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'It's her fault our family is facing a disaster.'

Lam Shu Pan purposely raised her voice to draw attention from the customers and employees in the bank.

'Aunty Lam, I haven't done anything to deserve your hatred,' Da Tian Ting said.

'You know what you have done,' Lam Shu Pan said.

'All I have done is found a better boyfriend than Shang Duan Hua to attend the wedding with,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Aunty Lam, don't forget it's your son who left

me. Auntie Lam, you shouldn't expect me to be single for the rest of my life while your son is happy with another woman. Auntie Lam, you shouldn't be this selfish. If your son doesn't want me, it doesn't mean another man can't want me.'

Da Tian Ting was disappointed how selfish Lam Shu Pan and Shang Ming were.

'Da Tian Ting, how can you speak rudely toward your elders?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

'Auntie Lam, take a good look at yourself,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Since I walked into the bank, you've been uncourteous toward me. How can I respect someone who treats me badly?'

'You!' Lam Shu Pan said.

'So what if you're an elder?' Ding Xiao Ran intervened. 'It doesn't give you the right to bully another person. Think about everything Tian Ting has done for you and your family in the last ten years. She sacrificed everything for Shang Duan Hua. Does it make you feel good to bully Tian Ting because she doesn't have parents?'

'Bitch, who are you to interfere?' Lam Shu Pan asked.

'My name isn't bitch,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'My parents are reasonable people, unlike you and your husband. Don't act righteous in front of me. Righteous people wouldn't mistreat Tian Ting the way you and your family mistreated her.'

'Oh, you must be Da Tian Ting's only friend, Ding Xiao Ran,' Lam Shu Pan said. 'It's true a rotten person would attract another rotten person.'

'Old woman...' Ding Xiao Ran said.

'Xiao Ran, forget it,' Da Tian Ting said. 'It's embarrassing to argue in front of a crowd.'

'Tian Ting, can't you see this old woman is overbearing and unreasonable?' Ding Xiao Ran asked. 'Since we're already arguing, I don't feel embarrassed to take this old woman down. Besides, it's been a long time since I gave my throat a good workout.'

'Xiao...' Da Tian Ting said.

'What an insolent child,' Lam Shu Pan interrupted. 'Didn't your parents teach

you manners?’

‘My parents are good people,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘They taught me good from bad, how to live with a conscience and be reasonable. They’re not bad parents like you. You taught Shang Duan Hua how to be a trashy man. It’s his stupidity to run off with another woman, and cast aside Tian Ting. Someone like Shang Duan Hua will receive retribution. Meeting his parents today, I get to see who he learned how to behave badly from.’

‘You!’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Lam Shu Pan, haven’t you said enough at home?’ Shang Ming asked. ‘Why do you need to embarrass me in public too?’

‘She’s the one who started arguing with me first,’ Lam Shu Pan said.

‘Lam Shu Pan, there are witnesses here,’ Shang Ming said. ‘Since Tian Ting stepped into the bank, she didn’t say anything to you. It’s you who insulted her. Aren’t you ashamed of yourself?’

‘In your eyes, everything I do is wrong while everything Da Tian Ting does is right,’ Lam Shu Pan said resentfully, glared at Da Tian Ting and stormed outside the bank.

Lam Shu Pan regretted Shang Duan Hua marrying Da Ming Sheng, but she was lucky Da Tian Ting wasn’t her daughter-in-law because it was Da Tian Ting’s fault that her family was in chaos.

Shang Ming shook his head at Lam Shu Pan’s retreating back.

‘Tian Ting, I’m sorry for your aunty’s behavior,’ Shang Ming said. ‘There’s been a lot of problems at home, and it affected your aunty’s behaviour. Tian Ting, I hope you can be understanding.’

‘Uncle Shang, there are too many misunderstandings between Aunty Lam and me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I don’t think it’s possible for me to reconcile with Aunty Lam. I’m sorry too, it’s partly my fault for not holding my tongue.’

‘Tian Ting, you don’t need to say sorry,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘Everyone here can see it’s the old woman who’s in the wrong.’

‘Xiao Ran, let’s forget it,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tian Ting, we didn’t say anything wrong,’ Ding Xiao Ran said.

‘Xiao Ran, please don’t say anything else,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘OK,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘Forget I said anything. Let’s go upstairs, and you can pay my rent.’

‘Tian Ting, wait,’ Shang Ming said.

‘Uncle Shang, what’s wrong?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Tian Ting, can you tell me if Shang’s company facing difficulties has anything to do with you?’ Shang Ming asked.

Da Tian Ting was taken back by Shang Ming’s accusation.

‘Uncle Shang, in your eyes, am I a vindictive person?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Of course I know you’re not a vindictive person,’ Shang Ming said. ‘But since Duan Hua left you to marry Ming Sheng, Tian Qiang stopped loaning money to Shang’s company. Without Tian Qiang’s loan, Shang’s company will go into liquidation.’

‘Uncle Shang, I swear on my life I have nothing to do with Shang’s company facing liquidation,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’m an insignificant person. How can I have any influence over what happens to Shang’s company?’

‘What about your boyfriend?’ Shang Ming asked.

‘I’ll ring my boyfriend now to give uncle an answer,’ Da Tian Ting said. She called Feng Kai Ze in front of Shang Ming. ‘Little monkey, did you do anything to make Shang’s company face liquidation?’

‘No,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘If you say you didn’t, I believe you,’ Da Tian Ting said and hung up the phone.

‘Uncle Shang, my boyfriend said he didn’t do anything to Shang’s company,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘How can you easily believe him?’ Shang Ming asked.

‘Uncle Shang, you stabbed my heart again,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I didn’t expect uncle and your family would suspect I would do something to harm Shang’s company. First uncle and your family accused me of burning Da Ming Sheng’s

arm, now you're accusing me of shutting down Shang's company. How can you and your family blame me for everything bad that happens to you and your family?'

'Tian Ting, these kind of people aren't worth your attention,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'Didn't we agree to live comfortable lives? Let's not get upset over worthless people.'

'Tian Ting, I'm sorry for suspecting you,' Shang Ming said.

'Uncle Shang, how much more pain do you and your family want to cause me before being satisfied?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'Tian Ting, I won't suspect you again,' Shang Ming said. 'I have somewhere I need to be.'

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 125

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[February 7, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)

# 126 part 1

## UVB – Chapter 126 (Part 1)

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## UVB – Chapter 126 (Part 1)



One call away.

After Feng Kai Ze received Da Tian Ting's phone call, he was worried about her.

'Ju Feng, hack into Tian Qiang's system and find out who caused Shang's company to face liquidation,' Feng Kai Ze instructed.

'My friend, can't you see I'm busy?' Ju Feng asked. 'If a small company like Shang's company flops, let it flop. It's not worth my hacking time. Besides, Shang's company has nothing to do with us unless you want to buy it. Even I can see Shang's company is a dead end company.'

'Put aside your work and find out why Shang's company flopped,' Feng Kai Ze insisted.

Ju Feng's ten fingers froze on the keyboard and looked at Feng Kai Ze's serious face. 'OK, I'll find out now.'

Ju Feng trusted Feng Kai Ze had an important reason to waste his time on something trivial.

Twenty minutes later, Ju Feng pressed enter. 'In the last five years, Tian Qiang loaned money to keep Shang's company afloat. But Shang's company kept making losses. Shang's company will be shut down soon because Tian Qiang



stopped loaning money to Shang's company. If I'm Tian Qiang's CEO, after giving a company a five year chance, I would stop loaning money to an unprofitable company too.'

Feng Kai Ze knew Tian Qiang wasn't a foolish bank. He suspected there was another reason why Tian Qiang stopped loaning money to Shang's company because Shang Ming accused Da Tian Ting of pulling strings. He thought the members of the Shang family were foolish and selfish to suspect Da Tian Ting would do anything to harm them.

'Ju Feng, find out who Tian Qiang's CEO is,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'No need,' Ju Feng said. 'Tian Qiang's CEO is Lam Xin Yu. Are you interested in Lam Xin Yu? Forget I asked. Your fierce apple is the only woman you love. Speaking of your fierce apple, since you can't bed her unless you marry her, when can I drink a wedding toast with you?'

'Is your brain only filled with dirt?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'It's normal for a man with a functioning body to have desires,' Ju Feng said. 'You and I are like brothers. You can tell me the truth, living with your fierce apple, don't you think about... if you love her, but you don't think about wanting her, perhaps you need to find a man.'

'Get back to work and talk less trash,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Today I'm in the mood to talk trash,' Ju Feng said. 'Kai Ze, you've been chasing after your fierce apple like you're in a war. You can't keep attacking and retreating. You need to go in for the kill to win the war. Right now you're only doting on her like she's under your captive. Don't say I didn't give you brotherly advice. If you don't go in for the kill, another man will steal her from you. Besides, battling with a woman in bed is hot.'

'I don't need you to worry about my private life,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'If you want to make money, keep working. Don't forget, I want fifty percent of Hong's company shares.'

Feng Kai Ze replayed Ju Feng's advice in his mind. Was he only keeping Da Tian Ting captive? He didn't want another man to steal Da Tian Ting from him.

Ju Feng let Feng Kai Ze off the hook, and his ten fingers resumed typing. 'Kai

Ze, I don't understand why you want fifty percent of Hong's company shares. Isn't it enough that you have fifty percent of Feng's company shares? Do you want Hong's company shares to stop your father from forcing you to marry Hong Shi Na?'

'I don't need fifty percent of Hong's company shares to deal with my father,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'No one can force me to marry that woman.'

'Then why do you want their shares?' Ju Feng said. 'To make money?'

'Because I see the Hong family as a big eyesore, is that a good enough reason for you?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'More than enough,' Ju Feng said and stopped prying.

Ju Feng thought it wouldn't hurt to have control over Hong's company.

Feng Kai Ze's head was distracted by thoughts of Da Tian Ting. He didn't get to spend the day with her, and wondered what she was doing and if she was happy.

At Tian Qiang, Da Tian Ting helped pay off Ding Xiao Ran's debt. Da Tian Ting was suspicious why they received VIP customer service.

'Tian Ting, in the past I had to come to Tian Qiang for work,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'But I was never treated like a queen at Tian Qiang like today. I think it's because I'm with you today. After all, you're Feng Kai Ze's girlfriend.'

'Xiao Ran, Kai Ze is a private person,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Only a few people know about his identity. Please don't go around announcing I'm his girlfriend.'

'Tian Ting, if Feng Kai Ze loves you, he wouldn't keep your relationship a secret,' Ding Xiao Ran said.

'Xiao Ran, put it this way, if Kai Ze is standing in front of you right now, can you recognise him?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'If you're not with me, I won't know who Feng Kai Ze is,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'He hides from the media. Most people know his name, but they don't know what he looks like... ah! Tian Ting!'

'What's wrong?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'I remember there's a rumor that Feng Kai Ze is engaged to Hong Shi Na,' Ding

Xiao Ran said. 'If he has a fiancée, you shouldn't let him play with your feelings.'

'Xiao Ran, you can't believe everything you read,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Do you think someone like Kai Ze would agree to an arranged marriage against his will?'

'Tian Ting, why do I get the feeling yours and Feng Kai Ze's relationship won't be smoothing sailing?' Ding Xiao Ran asked. 'It's not easy for someone like us to marry into a rich family.'

'I don't want to think about the obstacles,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Let's go shopping again.'

'OK,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'There's no rush, we have all day.'

Da Tian Ting and Ding Xiao Ran walked into a shop and Da Tian Ting received a phone call.

'Tian Ting, why is your uncle Da Qing Feng calling you?' Ding Xiao Ran asked.

'I don't know,' Da Tian Ting said.

'May be it's something important,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'You should pick up.'

Da Tian Ting answered Da Qing Feng's phone call.

'What?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'Uncle, stay where you are. I'll be there soon.'

Ding Xiao Ran was worried why Da Tian Ting looked petrified after Da Tian Ting hung up the phone.

'Tian Ting, what happened?' Ding Xiao Ran asked.

'I don't know what happened, but my uncle is on the rooftop and is threatening to jump,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I need to go to uncle's home.'

Ding Xiao Ran nodded her head and went with Da Tian Ting to Da Qing Feng's home by taxi.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 126 (Part 1)

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)

- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[February 9, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)

part 2

UVB – Chapter 126 (Part 2)

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



UVB – Chapter 126 (Part 2)



Note: UVB – Chapter 126 (Part 2) is padding.

Summary

Da Qing Feng held pieces of winter clothes in his arms. He stood on the rooftop, looking over the ledge.

‘I lost everything,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Why are people in the world selfish?’

‘Da Qing Feng, Da Tian Ting is on her way,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Don’t do anything crazy.’

‘Ning Kan, I know you regret marrying me because I can’t give you a luxurious life,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘I know you and Ming Sheng look down at me. You and Ming Sheng don’t care about me. It won’t make a difference to you and Ming Sheng whether I live or die.’

‘Stop thinking crazy thoughts,’ Ning Kan said. ‘You were hearing things.’

Ning Kan would rather be a poor married woman than a poor widow. Who was she going to rely on for financial support if Da Qing Feng dies?

‘I’m not crazy,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘I heard you say to Ming Sheng that you regret marrying me. You wish you left me like how Lam Xin Yu left my brother so you can marry a rich man.’

The cops asked Da Qing Feng who he wanted to see, Da Qing Feng said his niece Da Tian Ting, which increased Ning Kan’s resentment toward Da Tian Ting.

Da Tian Ting arrived in time to save Da Qing Feng, she persuaded him to step away from the ledge.

‘Uncle, don’t you want to see me get married?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Yes,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘What was I thinking? I need to see Tian Ting get married, and live a happy life. Tian Ting, I’m sorry. The winter clothes you gave me were destroyed.’

‘Uncle, don’t worry,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Winter clothes can be replaced. Aunt, how could you destroy uncle’s winter clothes?’

‘Who do you think you are to interfere in my family’s business?’ Ning Kan asked. ‘Besides, it wasn’t me.’

‘If it wasn’t you then it must be Da Ming Sheng,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Da Tian Ting, aren’t you ashamed of yourself speaking to me in a disrespectful tone?’ Ning Kan asked.

‘Aunt, for years I held my tongue because you’re my elder,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘How can I respect you when you and Da Ming Sheng continuously mistreated uncle? How can I not speak up on uncle’s behalf? How can you and Da Ming Sheng push uncle to the edge? I’m not the same pushover Da Tian Ting that I used to be in the past who let you walk all over me. I’m not letting you off the hook until you explain why uncle’s winter clothes were destroyed.’

\*\*\*

End of Summary of Chapter 126 (Part 2)

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## ***Related***

[September 10, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapter 127

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



UVB – Chapter 127



Ning Kan was outraged Da Tian Ting was criticizing her in front of neighbors.

‘Ning Kan, we’ve been your neighbors for years,’ a neighbour said. ‘You and Ming Sheng only know how to spend Da Qing Feng’s money. Tian Ting isn’t Da Qing Feng’s daughter, but she’s the only one who takes care of Da Qing Feng’s health all these years. You’re Da Qing Feng’s wife, but you’ve never bought him a winter coat. Yet Ming Sheng prances around in new designer clothes every season. If you want a harmonious family, you need to learn how to be a good wife, and Ming Sheng needs to learn how to be a good daughter.’

‘Where is Ming Sheng?’ a second neighbor asked. ‘After Ming Sheng married a rich man, we hardly see her visit Da Qing Feng, and Ning Kan. Doesn’t she care about her father and mother?’

‘Everyone shut up,’ Ning Kan said.



‘Ning Kan, you should take our advice,’ a third neighbor said. ‘We only want your family to reconcile.’

‘Nosy people, have you said enough?’ Ning Kan asked.

Da Tian Ting was disappointed Ning Kan showed no remorse.

‘Uncle, who destroyed your winter clothes?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘This morning, Ming Sheng came home drunk,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘She broke all the furnishings she got her hands on. She barged into my bedroom, and saw me folding the winter clothes you gave me. She was like dynamite. She picked up scissors, and cut up my winter clothes like someone possessed.’

‘Uncle, I’m sorry,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting deduced Da Ming Sheng was angry at her over the winter clothes incident at the mall, but Da Ming Sheng went overboard by cutting Da Qing Feng’s winter clothes.

‘Tian Ting, you didn’t cut up my winter clothes,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘You don’t need to say sorry.’

‘If Ming Sheng didn’t argue over winter clothes then she wouldn’t come here and cut up uncle’s winter clothes,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tian Ting, you always take responsibility for something that was out of your control,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘You don’t need to say sorry for anything. As Ming Sheng’s father, it’s me who should say sorry to you. I’m sorry Ming Sheng stole your fiancée, framed you for things you didn’t do, and for all the harm she caused you in the past. I let down your father too. Now I have no face left to face your father.’

‘Uncle, it doesn’t matter who’s wrong or right,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘What’s important is I’m living a happy life right now. Something good came out of a bad situation. If Da Ming Sheng didn’t steal my fiancée, I wouldn’t have a good boyfriend like Feng Kai Ze who truly loves me. Uncle, don’t be so hard on yourself.’

‘I lost everything,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘I lost my pride, and soon I’ll be jobless.’

‘Da Qing Feng, why are you such a pathetic man?’ Ning Kan asked. ‘Why do

you have to create such a public spectacle?’

‘Ning Kan-’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘A pathetic man like you should have died long ago,’ Ning Kan said.

‘Aunt, how can you say something that harsh to uncle?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘It’s Da Qing Feng’s fault he made nothing of his life,’ Ning Kan said. ‘He can’t blame anyone except himself for being a pathetic failure.’

‘Aunt, how can you call uncle a failure?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Uncle is an honorable, and hardworking man who dedicated his life to you and Da Ming Sheng.’

‘A pathetic loser like Da Qing Feng will always be a pathetic loser,’ Ning Kan said. ‘I want nothing to do with him. I want a divorce. I should have left him the same year your mother left your father.’

‘Aunt, how can you-’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Good, I want a divorce too,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘I’ve put up with a woman like you long enough.’

‘Uncle-,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tian Ting, you don’t need to change my mind,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Divorce is the right choice. It won’t affect Ming Sheng since she has her own family. Divorce will free me from this kind of woman.’

‘Good, let’s divorce,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Ming Sheng is my daughter. She’ll take care of me. You take care of yourself, and don’t bother my daughter.’

‘Ning Kan, you don’t have to worry,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘I won’t bother you or your daughter.’

‘What about the house?’ Ning Kan asked.

‘Aunt, you can keep the house,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Uncle has me. I’ll give uncle a carefree life.’

‘Da Tian Ting, don’t regret what you said today,’ Ning Kan said. ‘Da Qing Feng is all yours. Don’t come knocking when you don’t have a penny left.’

‘Tian Ting, I don’t want to burden you,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Uncle, you’re not a burden,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I know you love gardening. There’s a land that is waiting for you to turn it into a beautiful rose garden.’

‘Tian Ting, where are we going to find money to buy land?’ Da Qing Feng asked.

‘Uncle, believe in Tian Ting,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘She just paid one million dollars off my debt.’

‘One million?’ Da Qing Feng asked.

‘Tian Ting, you’re a joke,’ Ning Kan said. ‘You can’t shit out a penny, let alone one million dollars.’

‘Aunt, you don’t need to worry about me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘If I say money isn’t an issue then it isn’t.’

‘Keep deluding yourself,’ Ning Kan said. ‘When you declare bankruptcy, don’t beg me for money.’

‘Aunt, even if I’m bankrupt, I won’t beg you even for one dollar,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Uncle, let’s leave.’

‘Miss Da,’ Lu Wu Shen called, passing a business card to Da Tian Ting. ‘If you ever need financial advice, don’t hesitate to call me.’

‘Thank you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting, Da Qing Feng and Ding Xiao Ran walked past Ning Kan and the crowd.

‘Good riddance,’ Ning Kan said.

‘Madam, Miss Da wasn’t bluffing,’ Lu Wu Shen said. ‘Her outfit is worth at least two hundred thousand dollars.’

‘Two hundred thousand dollars?’ Ning Kan asked.

Ning Kan didn’t believe Da Tian Ting was living the high life after Shang Duan Hua married Da Ming Sheng.

Ning Kan called Da Ming Sheng’s phone.

‘Ming Sheng, Da Tian Ting saved your father-’ Ning Kan said.

‘He’s lucky he’s alive,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Call me when he’s dead.’

Da Ming Sheng was smoking and drinking at a bar.

‘Ming Sheng, is it true that Da Tian Ting is rich?’ Ning Kan asked.

‘Mum, she’s mental,’ Da Ming Sheng said. ‘Of course she’s not rich. Right now, I’m stressed. Don’t bother me.’

Da Ming Sheng hung up the phone. She only cared about how to get money off Shang Duan Hua’s family. Since she’s in a loveless marriage, she didn’t need to act like a dutiful wife.

On the other end of the phone, Ning Kan didn’t care whether Da Tian Ting was rich, because she secured the house as the divorce settlement.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 127

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[September 11, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapter 128

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



UVB – Chapter 128



Da Tian Ting and Ding Xiao Ran took Da Qing Feng shopping, and Da Tian Ting bought Da Qing Feng a new wardrobe.

After shopping, Da Tian Ting and Ding Xiao Ran took Da Qing Feng back to Da Tian Ting’s home, and they ate dinner together. It was the happiest day in Da Qing Feng’s life. The sounds of laughter around the dining table proved to Da Qing Feng that he wasn’t dreaming.

‘Uncle, Xiao Ran and I made all your favorite dishes,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Dig in.’

‘Uncle, don’t let Tian Ting’s and me slaving in the kitchen go to waste,’ Ding Xiao Ran said, smiling at Da Qing Feng.

‘Thank you Tian Ting and Xiao Ran,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘You two gave me hope that my life is worth living.’

‘Uncle, promise me that if you ever feel hopeless, talk to me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Your life is valuable. Let’s leave bad memories behind, and look to the future. Uncle, taste the beef dish I made.’

‘Thank you Tian Ting,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘I lost a wife, and a daughter, but I have a good niece.’

Da Qing Feng was grateful he had at least one family member who cared about him. He didn’t need to be rich, all he wanted was a family that can happily share a meal together.

‘Xiao Ran, won’t your parents be worried if you get home late?’ Da Qing Feng asked.

‘Uncle, I called my parents to let them know I’m eating dinner at Tian Ting’s home,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘And if I stay late, I’ll sleep over.’

‘Both you and Tian Ting are reasonable daughters,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘It’s my fault, I didn’t raise Da Ming Sheng to be a good daughter.’

Da Qing Feng felt helpless. He knew if Da Ming Sheng continued on her path of destruction, it would be too late for her to turn over a new leaf.

‘Uncle, what happened to forgetting bad memories?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘Eat more.’

‘I forgot,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Let’s eat.’

The three of them heard the sound of the front door opened. They turned around, and were surprised to see Feng Kai Ze.

Feng Kai Ze was equally surprised to see Da Tian Ting had company. If he had known, he would have rang the doorbell instead of using the spare key.

‘Tian Ting, your boyfriend is home,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Tian Ting, you’re one lucky girl,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘Your boyfriend is hotter than Shang Duan Hua. Don’t let a good catch get away.’

Da Tian Ting felt awkward. ‘Kai Ze, you’re home.’

‘Why are you acting weird?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘Usually, you’re not scared to see me.’

Feng Kai Ze didn't mind Da Tian Ting spending time with Ding Xiao Ran and Da Qing Feng.

'Today is different...' Da Tian Ting said.

'I don't mind as long as you don't bring Shang Duan Hua home,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Kai Ze, I guarantee that I rather bring strangers home than the Shang Duan Hua pig,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Have you ate dinner? Xiao Ran and I made many dishes.'

Da Tian Ting didn't know why she suddenly felt happy to see Feng Kai Ze.

'I had planned to take you out to dinner,' Feng Kai Ze said.

Feng Kai Ze sat next to Da Tian Ting. His aura made Da Qing Feng and Ding Xiao Ran intimidated.

'Uncle, we met before,' Feng Kai Ze said, smiling warmly. 'Do you remember me?'

Besides Da Tian Ting and Ju Feng, Feng Kai Ze didn't smile in front of people. He made an exception for Da Tian Ting's true family.

'Of course I remember you,' Da Qing Feng said. 'You're Tian Ting's boyfriend.'

Da Qing Feng felt like an intruder.

'Mr. Feng, do you remember me?' Ding Xiao Ran asked.

'You're Tian Ting's best friend,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'We met at Tian Ting's old workplace.'

'It's a privilege that someone like Mr. Feng remembers someone insignificant like me,' Ding Xiao Ran said.

'Kai Ze... don't tell me that you're the heir of Feng's company,' Da Qing Feng said.

'Uncle, I'm Feng Kai Ze,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'But I have no connection with Feng's company. We're rivals.'

Da Qing Feng understood why Da Tian Ting said money was no longer an issue. It made him worry that she would face opposition from Feng Kai Ze's family.

‘Uncle, why do you look anxious?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Qing Feng didn’t expect Feng Kai Ze was Da Tian Ting’s boyfriend. He knew Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng wouldn’t believe it either.

‘Tian Ting, you can tell me the truth,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Did Kai Ze team up with you to hoodwink Ming Sheng and Duan Hua? Or do you and Kai Ze truly love each other?’

If Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze were acting, Da Qing Feng wouldn’t hesitate to separate them for Da Tian Ting’s sake.

‘Uncle, we’re not acting,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Kai Ze is little monkey who stole my diary.’

‘Kai Ze is little monkey... that means he is the heir of Feng’s company,’ Da Qing Feng said.

Da Qing Feng thought life was full of coincidences.

‘Yes,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Kai Ze is little monkey. We truly love each other.’

Hateful? Feng Kai Ze frowned. He couldn’t believe how petty Da Tian Ting was. How could she used to think he was hateful just because he took her diary?

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 128

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[September 11, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)



UVB – Chapter 129

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



UVB – Chapter 129



Da Qing Feng didn’t want Da Tian Ting to walk on egg shells. He didn’t want Feng Kai Ze’s powerful family to make Da Tian Ting’s life hell.

‘Mr. Feng, I don’t know how you truly feel toward Tian Ting,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘But if you can’t guarantee you can make Tian Ting happy then I want you to let her go right now.’

‘Uncle, I have no relationship with Feng’s company,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ve been looking for Tian Ting for years, because I want to give her a happy life.’

‘Uncle, you can believe little monkey,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘He’s a man of his

word. Besides, you can trust my judgment.'

Da Tian Ting knew her relationship with Feng Kai Ze would be tested. As long as Feng Kai Ze didn't leave me, she wouldn't let go of him easily.

'Tian Ting, I trust your judgment,' Da Qing Feng said. 'Seeing you with a good man, gives me hope that when I see your father again, I didn't let him down. I only interrogated Kai Ze in your father's stead.'

'Uncle, you don't need to worry about my future anymore,' Da Tian Ting said. 'It's your future that is more important. Tomorrow, we'll look for fertile land suitable for uncle to grow roses.'

Before being reunited with Feng Kai Ze, Da Tian Ting didn't dream she could one day make Da Qing Feng's dream of growing roses come true.

'Can I really grow my own roses?' Da Qing Feng asked.

'Little monkey, can you help uncle?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'You can do anything you want,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Have you forgotten what we talked about before?'

'Kai Ze, I haven't forgotten,' Da Tian Ting said. 'When I helped Xiao Ran today, I was uncomfortable spending your money. But Xiao Ran and uncle are my family, and I want to help them as much as I can.'

'Tian Ting, when will you accept that what I tell you is sincere?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'I believe you're sincere,' Da Tian Ting said. 'But I'm not used to spending another person's money or taking advantage of another person.'

'Am I an outsider to you?' Feng Kai Ze asked. 'If you keep being courteous with me, you owe me a favor.'

'Kai Ze, we have company,' Da Tian Ting said.

'Aye,' Ding Xiao Ran said. 'I can't hear anything. I heard nothing.'

'Mr. Feng, I'm happy to hand Tian Ting over to you,' Da Qing Feng said. 'She's one stubborn girl. I despaired when Shang Duan Hua left Tian Ting. Now I can breathe easier knowing she's in good hands.'

‘Uncle, I can reassure you that Tian Ting is good hands,’ Feng Kai Ze said, holding Da Tian Ting’s hand.

‘Good,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Uncle, I’m really happy,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Um,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Let’s eat.’

‘Since Tian Ting has a generous boyfriend, does that mean I don’t need to pay back the loan?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked.

‘Xiao Ran, you sure know how to take advantage of your best friend’s boyfriend,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘How much does Xiao Ran need?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘One million dollars,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘That is nothing,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Xiao Ran doesn’t need to pay it back. Think of it as me repaying your best friend for everything she helped you with before you started working.’

‘It’s your money,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll respect your decision.’

Ding Xiao Ran interrupted before Feng Kai Ze could say his money was Da Tian Ting’s money to spend.

‘Are you two serious?’ Ding Xiao Ran asked.

‘My word is gold,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You have always been there for Tian Ting, of course I wouldn’t hesitate to help you. But people who mistreat her, I wouldn’t hesitate to give them hell.’

‘Good,’ Ding Xiao Ran said. ‘Tian Ting and uncle are my witnesses.’

‘Mr. Feng... I know Da Ming Sheng has wronged Tian Ting in the past,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Can you give Da Ming Sheng another chance, and let her off the hook? She’ll always be my daughter. It’s my fault, I didn’t raise her properly.’

‘Uncle, you did your best,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘I warned Da Ming Sheng that marrying Shang Duan Hua was a mistake,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘He’s an irresponsible and fickle man. Now that his family are in a financial crisis, they’ve taken their frustrations out on Da Ming Sheng.’

‘I’m not angry at Da Ming Sheng because she stole Shang Duan Hua or for all the hurtful things she’s done toward me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘What makes me angry is the way she’s taken uncle for granted. She doesn’t know how lucky she is to have a father like you in her life.’

‘She’s still my daughter even when she makes me angry,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Mr. Feng, Tian Ting, please don’t make Da Ming Sheng suffer.’

Feng Kai Ze smiled coldly. ‘As long as Da Ming Sheng doesn’t hurt Tian Ting in the future, I’ll let her be.’

‘Thank you Mr. Feng,’ Da Qing Feng said.

‘Uncle, don’t worry,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ve cut ties with Shang Duan Hua and Da Ming Sheng.’

Da Qing Feng did his best to protect Da Ming Sheng. Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze gave Da Ming Sheng a second chance so if Da Ming Sheng continued to cause trouble for them, he couldn’t fault Da Tian Ting and Feng Kai Ze for wanting revenge.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 129

**Share this:**

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

***Related***

[September 11, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)

UVB – Chapter 130

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



UVB – Chapter 130



Note: Chapter 130 is a filler chapter.

Summary of Chapter 130

Within one day, Feng Kai Ze found a suitable land for Da Qing Feng to grow roses. Apart from the land needing a new irrigation system, Feng Kai Ze was satisfied with the land, and he showed it to Da Qing Feng and Da Tian Ting.

The moment Da Qing Feng stepped out of the car, it was like seeing his childhood dream come to life. Da Qing Feng saw his dream land, not too big and not too small to grow roses, and there was a double storey house overlooking the land.

There was a ping pong exchange of ‘thank you and you shouldn’t have’ between Da Qing Feng, Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting.

Seriously, Da Qing Feng needed a lesson in ‘don’t look a gift horse in the mouth’.

‘Uncle, I have one simple condition,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Little monkey didn’t you say you want to help my real family unconditionally?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘It’s OK,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘What’s the condition?’

‘Ning Kan, Da Ming Sheng, Shang Duan Hua and his family are not allowed to step foot on this land,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘They’re not even allowed to touch one rose or any equipment on this land.’

Feng Kai Ze didn’t have a habit of making people’s dreams come true. If Da Qing Feng didn’t treat Da Tian Ting kindly, Feng Kai Ze wouldn’t even lift a finger to help Da Qing Feng.

‘Why?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘It’s important to me,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Ning Kan and I are divorced,’ Da Qing Feng said, ‘and Ming Sheng has her own family. I agree to your simple condition.’

‘Uncle, I’ll come here often to help you grow roses so you won’t be lonely,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze frowned. He wouldn’t have helped Da Qing Feng if he knew it meant Da Tian Ting would spend more time apart from him.

‘Tian Ting, remember the time I was away on a business trip and left you in charge of the garden?’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘I was away for one day, and the flowers wilted, because you gave them excess water.’

‘That was an accident,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tian Ting, you need to think about your own happiness,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘Tend to your own garden, and nurture your happiness. Understand?’

‘I get it,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘But it doesn’t mean I can’t visit uncle.’

‘You two... leave this old man to grow roses,’ Da Qing Feng said. ‘You two young lovebirds would only be in the way here, and end up ruining the roses.’

Let's save our voices, and call it a day.'

Feng Kai Ze smiled. He was satisfied Da Qing Feng convinced the dense Da Tian Ting to reserve her time for him instead of on Da Qing Feng and the roses.

'Little monkey, can't you be a little less frosty toward uncle?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'You should know by now that this is me being generous toward uncle,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'You win,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I want to pack uncle's new clothes for him. Looking at roses turns his brain into mash.'

\*\*\*

At Da Qing Feng's old home, Ning Kan felt Da Qing Feng's absence. She didn't expect to feel so lonely.

'Mum, I'm home,' Da Ming Sheng said, staggering into the living room.

'Ming Sheng, what are you doing here?' Ning Kan asked. 'Why do you reek of alcohol?'

'Mum, I'm tired,' Da Ming Sheng said. 'I'm not in the mood to fight. I just want to sleep. Where's my bed?'

Ning Kan's grand vision of being divorced was dispelled. Ning Kan expected Da Ming Sheng to give her a good life, not come home drunk. Suddenly, Ning Kan regretted divorcing Da Qing Feng. Ning Kan didn't know how to repair the damage. Ning Kan's first priority was to think of a way to help Da Ming Sheng mend fences with Shang Duan Hua and his parents.

\*\*\*

End of summary of chapter 130

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)

- 

***Related***

[September 15, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)



## UVB – Chapter 131

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## UVB – Chapter 131



In the morning, Feng Kai Ze opened the front door to take Da Tian Ting out to eat breakfast. He didn't expect to see Hong Shi Na lurking outside the front door.

Hong Shi Na was about to knock, but the front door swung opened. She was elated to see Feng Kai Ze.

'Feng Kai Ze, you didn't move,' Hong Shi Na said. 'I looked everywhere for you. I came here on the off chance that you didn't move.'

'Why did you come here?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

Feng Kai Ze didn't want Da Tian Ting to misunderstand that there was something going on between him and Hong Shi Na again. Even if Hong Shi Na visited him one hundred times, his heart wouldn't be swayed. All he wanted was to get rid of a pest like Hong Shi Na.

‘Feng Kai Ze, our wedding day is approaching,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘Shouldn’t we take pre-wedding photos?’

‘Hong Shi Na, I told you,’ Feng Kai Ze said, ‘I’m not marrying you.’

‘But your father set our wedding date,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘You know that when your father set his mind to something, he makes it happen.’

‘As long as I don’t agree to marry you,’ Feng Kai Ze said, ‘no one can force me to marry you. This is your last chance to get lost. If you bother me again, you’re going to regret it.’

Feng Kai Ze wanted to close the door, but he spotted Da Tian Ting walking toward him.

Da Tian Ting wanted to have breakfast with Feng Kai Ze. She didn’t expect to see Hong Shi Na show up at Feng Kai Ze’s door again. Although she was unhappy to see Hong Shi Na, she trusted Feng Kai Ze wouldn’t do anything to betray her.

‘Good morning,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Tian Ting, are you thinking of bad thoughts again?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘Do I look like a petty person?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Yes,’ Feng Kai Ze said, pinching Da Tian Ting’s nose. ‘I just don’t know how many bad thoughts are running through your head.’

‘If you keep pinching my nose,’ Da Tian Ting said, pushing Feng Kai Ze’s hand away, ‘my nose will disappear.’

‘If that happens,’ Feng Kai Ze said, smiling, ‘I can pull out your nose.’

Hong Shi Na hated being ignored like she didn’t exist. She hated how Da Tian Ting stole Feng Kai Ze’s affections from her.

‘Feng Kai Ze, about our wedding-’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘Hong Shi Na, if you’re that desperate to get married,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘Go marry the devil. For the last time, I’m not going to marry you.’

‘Your father-,’ Hong Shi Na said.

‘He and I have nothing to do with each other,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Feng Kai Ze, your father is a powerful man,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘You should reconsider opposing your father. Don’t throw your future away like this.’

‘If you keep getting on my nerves,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m going to turn everyone at Hong’s company into beggars.’

‘Feng Kai Ze, what’s so good about her?’ Hong Shi Na asked. ‘I’m the better choice. I love you, and I can help your future.’

Da Tian Ting held Feng Kai Ze’s hand. She knew she was being selfish holding onto Feng Kai Ze even though she couldn’t help his future.

‘Tian Ting, stop thinking bad thoughts,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m not going to let anyone break our love for each other. Advancing my career without you in my life is meaningless.’

‘Little monkey, I won’t waver again,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘If you waver again,’ Feng Kai Ze said, ‘you’ll be breaking my heart again.’

‘Little monkey, I’ll cook breakfast to make it up to you,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Let’s go find a new place to live together,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I don’t want to give any pests a chance to ruin our time together.’

‘Moving constantly is a bother,’ Da Tian Ting said.

On second thoughts, Da Tian Ting didn’t want women like Hong Shi Na popping up at Feng Kai Ze’s door every day.

‘I changed my mind,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘I’ll go pack.’

Feng Kai Ze saw Da Tian Ting run to pack, and he laughed.

‘Feng Kai Ze, don’t leave me,’ Hong Shi Na said, holding onto Feng Kai Ze’s arm. ‘I love you.’

‘Since sixteen years ago,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘There’s only one woman who occupies my heart. If you’re smart, you’ll get lost. I’m not giving you another chance. If you do anything to hurt Tian Ting, I’ll give you hell.’

‘Stop kidding yourself,’ Hong Shi Na said. ‘If your father finds out about her, he’s going to ruin her life. I’m not going to help you hide her from your father anymore.’

‘If he ruins my woman’s life,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’m going to make him wish he was never born. Hong Shi Na, don’t use him to threaten me. It makes you even more unattractive.’

Feng Kai Ze dismissed Hong Shi Na, and he went to pack.

Hong Shi Na had never been so humiliated in her life. She didn’t care what methods she had to use, she was going to do everything to make Feng Kai Ze hers.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 131

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[September 20, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 132

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## UVB – Chapter 132



Ten minutes later, Feng Kai Ze was done packing, but Hong Shi Na hadn't left.

'Feng Kai Ze, I had a lapse before,' Hong Shi Na said. 'I shouldn't have threatened you. Give me another chance, I promise I won't make the same mistake again.'

Feng Kai Ze closed the door, and waited for Hong Shi Na to leave.

Hong Shi Na wasn't going to let Da Tian Ting have Feng Kai Ze. She was going to find a way to make Da Tian Ting leave Feng Kai Ze forever. With Da Tian Ting out of the picture, Feng Kai Ze would be hers.

Da Tian Ting had packed most of her belongings except her mother's gift. She missed and resented her mother.

'What are you thinking about?' Feng Kai Ze asked.

'Nothing important,' Da Tian Ting said. 'My bags are overflowing. What am I going to do with the clothes I can't fit in my bags?'

'Take what you can,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'Dump the rest.'

'Are you kidding?' Da Tian Ting asked. 'The tags are still on them. Quickly, help me fit them into my bags.'

Later, Feng Kai Ze carried Da Tian Ting's bags outside, and he couldn't believe Hong Shi Na was still standing outside the front door.

'Feng Kai Ze,' Hong Shi Na called.

'Kai Ze, don't stand around,' Da Tian Ting said. 'Let's go.'

'How dare you order Feng Kai Ze around?' Hong Shi Na asked. 'Do you know who he is? You're not even fit to carry his shoes. Feng Kai Ze, how can you throw everything away to become her butler?'

'It's rare for someone to tick me off this much,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Feng Kai Ze, I only want what's good for you,' Hong Shi Na said, holding onto Feng Kai Ze's bag.

'Don't play the what's good for me card,' Feng Kai Ze said, shoving Hong Shi Na's hand away. 'My life is none of your business. Move out of the way.'

'Feng Kai Ze, if you leave with her today,' Hong Shi Na said. 'I'm going to tell your father about her, and let him deal with her.'

'Whatever happens, I'll protect Tian Ting,' Feng Kai Ze said. 'I can't say the same for you. Who's going to have your back? Don't think hiding behind Hong's company can save you if anything happens to Tian Ting. From now on, stay away from us.'

Da Tian Ting got a vibe that Hong Shi Na and Da Ming Sheng were two of a kind. She got a bad feeling that Hong Shi Na was out for her blood. But she wasn't going to let Hong Shi Na's interference break up her relationship with Feng Kai Ze.

Feng Kai Ze carried the bags to the car, and he drove off with Da Tian Ting.

'Kai Ze, are you still angry?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'I hate how Hong Shi Na thinks she's top dog and feels entitled to look down on others,' Feng Kai Ze said.

'Little monkey, I don't want you to think about other women,' Da Tian Ting said. 'You're not allowed to think about being angry at other women either. If you don't stop being angry at Hong Shi Na, you're going to make me jealous.'

Feng Kai Ze laughed. ‘Fine. I won’t think about other women or be angry at other women.’

‘Good,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Kai Ze, where are we heading? Is there a place we can stay that the Hong family can’t find us?’

‘I have a mansion in the east district,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘It’s supposed to be our home after we’re married. Since we’re going to get married sooner or later, we may as well move into our home now. I’ll post security guards outside our home. If Hong Shi Na finds out our address, she can only stand outside and stare.’

‘When did you buy it?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

Da Tian Ting was surprised Feng Kai Ze had prepared their home for their married life. How was she going to keep up with his lightning speed?

‘The day after we met each other again,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘What made you so sure that I would say yes to marrying you?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Because in this lifetime I’m not marrying anyone except you,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You have two choices, to say yes or yes.’

Da Tian Ting was certain in this lifetime, Feng Kai Ze had entrapped her.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 132

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## Related

[September 21, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)

## UVB – Chapter 133

- [Underdog Versus Boss](#)



## UVB – Chapter 133



Caution: UVB Chapter 133 is a sappy chapter. It's not advisable to read on a full stomach due to high sappy factor.

## UVB – Chapter 133

Da Tian Ting stood gaping at the paradise palace on earth. From the pristine roof to the manicured green grass, everything was perfection. It didn't look like it was built to be lived in, but to be admired.

'Little monkey, are you positive this is where you want us to live?' Da Tian Ting asked.

'We drove all the way here,' Feng Kai Ze said, holding Da Tian Ting's hand. 'Where else are we supposed to live if not here?'

From the moment Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting stepped into their home, a line of servants greeted them.

'Welcome home Mr. and Mrs. Feng,' the servants greeted.



‘Kai Ze, why are they calling me Mrs. Feng?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘I’m still a bachelorette. It’s uncomfortable hearing people call me Mrs. Feng.’

‘I instructed them that the first woman I bring home is my wife,’ Feng Kai Ze said, smiling. ‘It’s only right that they call you Mrs. Feng. This is our home, you’ll get used to being called Mrs. Feng.’

Da Tian Ting smiled awkwardly at the servants.

‘Bring the bags from the car to the master bedroom,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘My wife and I will be living here starting today.’

‘Yes Mr. Feng,’ the servants said.

‘Mr. and Mrs. Feng, this is short notice,’ the head maid said. ‘I’ll go buy fresh ingredients to prepare your meals.’

‘I remembered I called to give notice earlier,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘What’s the hold up?’

‘I’m sorry Mr. Feng,’ the head maid said. ‘It won’t happen again.’

‘I don’t want to hear excuses,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I only care about the end product. If this happens again, you can resign.’

‘Mr. Feng, I promise this won’t happen again,’ the head maid said.

‘Perhaps the best option is for me to find someone competent to replace you,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘Mr. Feng, I’m begging you to give me another chance,’ the head maid said. ‘My son is studying at college. I need this job to support him.’

‘Kai Ze, why are you being unreasonable?’ Da Tian Ting asked, frowning. ‘It’s unreasonable to give anyone one hour to meet all your demands.’

‘Are you begging me on her behalf?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘If you want to put it that way then go ahead,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Are you going to give in to me on this occasion?’

‘What status are you asking me to give in to you?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘As my girlfriend or as my wife?’

‘What’s the difference?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘There’s a big difference,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘As my wife, you make the rules here. As my girlfriend, I get the final say here. So, are you my wife or girlfriend?’

‘Kai Ze, you’re being a monkey ass,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Feng Kai Ze was amused seeing Da Tian Ting get worked up.

‘Wife or girlfriend?’ Feng Kai Ze asked. ‘If you choose girlfriend, her losing her job is on your shoulders.’

‘You’re making me want to lose my temper,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Da Tian Ting fisted her hands. She was itching to give the little monkey an earful. What happened to him listening to everything she says?

‘Is this a home or a prison?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘How can this place look like a prison?’ Feng Kai Ze asked.

‘You’re acting like a prison guard,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘Lording over your prisoners here.’

‘If I’m the prison guard here then you’re the prison guard’s wife,’ Feng Kai Ze said, hugging Da Tian Ting. ‘I want my wife to give birth to lots of baby boy and baby girl prisoners.’

‘Can’t you see there are people here?’ Da Tian Ting asked. ‘You don’t have to hug me so tight, and embarrass me in front of everyone here.’

The head maid acted like she heard and saw nothing.

‘You should thank my wife,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘You get to keep your job because she begged me on your behalf.’

‘Thank you Mr. and Mrs. Feng,’ the head maid said, bowing. ‘I’ll endeavour to give better service in the future.’

The head maid left Feng Kai Ze and Da Tian Ting alone, and Da Tian Ting frowned.

‘Since when did I say I’m using my status as your wife to beg you to let her keep her job?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘You spoke up for her first,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I helped you choose to be my wife so you can help her keep her job.’

‘I swear,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘You’re like a male version of Hong Shi Na. Perhaps you and her will make the perfect pair.’

Feng Kai Ze’s amusement disappeared.

‘Little monkey, why are you angry again?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘I hate hearing Hong Shi Na’s name,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘From now on, don’t mention her name again.’

‘That’s fine by me,’ Da Tian Ting said. ‘It’s not like I’m a fan of her and her brother. I won’t mention either of them again.’

Feng Kai Ze took advantage of Da Tian Ting being distracted, he clasped her face, and kissed her lips.

‘Who let you kiss me on impulse?’ Da Tian Ting asked.

‘Aren’t I allowed to kiss my wife?’ Feng Kai Ze asked, kissing Da Tian Ting’s lips again.

‘See if I care about you again,’ Da Tian Ting said.

Over the past years, Shang Duan Hua didn’t ever make Da Tian Ting’s heart race like the way Feng Kai Ze made her heart race every time he kissed her.

‘Tian Ting, when will you marry me?’ Feng Kai Ze proposed out of the blue.

‘I’ll think about it after you deal with your messy engagement with Hong Shi Na,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Good,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I witnessed you saying that you’ll marry me as long as I find a way to end the messy one-sided engagement.’

Da Tian Ting still had reservations about marriage. But she believed Feng Kai Ze would be a good husband to her. Besides, she was at a marriageable age, it could be her last chance to get married.

‘Your silence is your consent,’ Feng Kai Ze said.

‘We’ll discuss this matter after you end the engagement,’ Da Tian Ting said.

‘Trust me,’ Feng Kai Ze said. ‘I’ll end this messiness quickly. Then I’ll marry you, and carry you over the threshold as my legal wife.’

Feng Kai Ze couldn't believe his dream of marrying Da Tian Ting was going to come true soon.

'I don't want to talk to you anymore,' Da Tian Ting said. 'I want to call uncle. Today is uncle's official divorce settlement date.'

Da Tian Ting was worried Ning Kan would cause trouble for Da Qing Feng, and refuse to sign the divorce papers.

\*\*\*

End of Chapter 133

## Share this:

- [Click to share on Twitter \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Facebook \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- [Click to share on Google+ \(Opens in new window\)](#)
- 

## *Related*

[September 21, 2016 trungnguyen123](#)